

苏小暖 著

废材逆袭心姐姐

SHIYAN
XIAONIE

邪王追妻：



The Demonic King Chases His Wife

Chapters 001 - 100

by: Su Xiao Nuan

Synopsis:

She, renowned assassin of the 21st century, actually crossed over to become Su Manor's most useless good-for-nothing Fourth Miss. He, the Empire's imperial highness, Prince Jin, was an emotionless overbearing demonic tyrant with unrivaled talent. Everyone knew that she was a idiotic good-for-nothing and bullied her as they pleased. But only he, the overbearing tyrant with the discerning eye, just wouldn't let go even if his life depended on it. For the time being, let's see how the clash of stubborn versus stubborn plays out in this good show of the chaser and the chased.

Table of Contents

[Chapter 01 – The Heart Wrenching Betrayal](#)

[Chapter 02 – This is Simply Torture!](#)

[Chapter 03 – I’ll Definitely Kill Her Next Time!](#)

[Chapter 04 – A Wicked Person Shall Be Harassed by One of the Same Kind](#)

[Chapter 05 – The Impeccably Handsome Youngster](#)

[Chapter 06 – Winner is King](#)

[Chapter 07 – Then Give This King a Kiss](#)

[Chapter 08 – The Hot Lingering Breath](#)

[Chapter 09 – The Game’s Outcome Has Yet To Be Decided](#)

[Chapter 010 – What An Awesome Big Brother!](#)

[Chapter 011 – He’s Prince Jin?!](#)

[Chapter 012 – Submit to me and prosper or oppose me and perish](#)

[Chapter 013 – Her heart went ba-thump ba-thump](#)

[Chapter 014 – Staring until the heart grew fearful](#)

[Chapter 015 – The good-for-nothing is actually a super genius! \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 016 – The good-for-nothing is actually a super genius! \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 017 – The good-for-nothing is actually a super genius! \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 018 – Talent to become an Apothecarist](#)

[Chapter 019 – My heart had been broken long ago](#)

[Chapter 020 – Simply unbelievable](#)

[Chapter 021 – The long awaited day](#)

[Chapter 022 – Give you the position of an imperial concubine \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 023 – Give you the position of an imperial concubine \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 024 – The crown prince unexpectedly... can't raise it up](#)

[Chapter 025 – Stop indulging in your wild fantasies!](#)

[Chapter 026 – I really must thank you!](#)

[Chapter 027 – Three days flashed by in an instant](#)

[Chapter 028 – At this moment, time seemed to have stopped](#)

[Chapter 029 – This king is wholeheartedly willing](#)

[Chapter 030 – The Dragon Ring's approval](#)

[Chapter 031 – An ordinary man is innocent, but having a cherished item would get him into trouble](#)

[Chapter 032 – What a sharp girl](#)

[Chapter 033 – As expected, she was clever enough](#)

[Chapter 034 – The Guardian of the Hidden Treasure Pavilion](#)

[Chapter 035 – Strong intent to kill](#)

[Chapter 036 – The stratagem of moving the tiger from the mountain](#)

[Chapter 037 – Acquired too easily](#)

[Chapter 038 – When meeting face to face on a narrow path, the brave will be victorious.](#)

[Chapter 039 – The wicked sneer](#)

[Chapter 040 – Arrogant brazen thieves \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 041 – Arrogant brazen thieves \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 042 – Arrogant brazen thieves \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 043 – Hidden treasure map fragment appears \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 044 – Hidden treasure map fragment appears \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 045 – A tiger doesn't show its might so you treat me like a sick cat \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 046 – A tiger doesn't show its might so you treat me like a sick cat \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 047 – A tiger doesn't show its might so you treat me like a sick cat \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 048 – A tiger doesn't show its might so you treat me like a sick cat \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 049 – A strong and overbearing kiss \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 050 – A strong and overbearing kiss \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 51 – A strong and overbearing kiss \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 52 – A strong and overbearing kiss \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 53 – To save people from calamity \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 54 – To save people from calamity \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 55 – To save people from calamity \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 56 – To save people from calamity \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 57 – Coldly arrogant, distinctively remote, with an indomitable air that terrorized all](#)

[Chapter 58 – Unexpectedly it really was her!](#)

[Chapter 59 – Cut off at the wrist](#)

[Chapter 60 – To tell you a secret \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 61 – To tell you a secret \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 62 – To tell you a secret \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 63 – To tell you a secret \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 64 – Sunset Mountain Range \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 65 – Sunset Mountain Range \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 66 – Sunset Mountain Range \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 67 – Sunset Mountain Range \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 68 – Sunset Mountain Range \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 69 – Sunset Mountain Range \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 70 – Sunset Mountain Range \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 71 – A pair of Jade Annulus \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 72 – A pair of Jade Annulus \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 73 – A pair of Jade Annulus \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 74 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 75 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 76 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 77 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 78 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 79 - To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 80 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 81 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit \(8\)](#)

[Chapter 82 – You have been abandoned \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 83 – You have been abandoned \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 84 – You have been abandoned \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 85 – The lovable, adorable, little dragon \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 86 – The lovable, adorable, little dragon \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 87 – The lovable, adorable, little dragon \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 88 – To come back from death's door \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 89 – To come back from death's door \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 91 - To come back from death's door \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 91 - To come back from death's door \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 92 - To come back from death's door \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 93 - To come back from death's door \(6\)](#)

[Chapter 94 – To come back from death's door \(7\)](#)

[Chapter 95 – To search for hidden treasures \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 96 – To search for hidden treasures \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 97 – To search for hidden treasures \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 98 – To search for hidden treasures \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 99 – To search for hidden treasures \(5\)](#)

[Chapter 100 – In enemy hands \(1\)](#)

Chapter 01 – The Heart Wrenching Betrayal

Night. Under the starry sky of Cloud Fall Mountain's summit, the cool breeze blew gently and all was still.

Su Luo's gentle eyes carried a hint of happiness as she tenderly stared at the man before her eyes: "Yun Qi, as soon as I quit the organization, we'll settle down here okay?"

Yun Qi's sharp eyebrows and sparking eyes brought about an intoxicating tenderness: "Girl, you're going to quit just like that?"

Su Luo turned around to overlook the distant night sky, then turned around wearing a beautifully bright smile: "In these past ten or so years, if I wasn't training, I'd be killing while always on the verge of life and death. There wasn't even a peaceful day. Now I'm already weary of this kind of lifestyle so I want to hurry up and break away from it. Don't tell me that you don't think the same?"

While speaking, Su Luo took out a small brocade box and waved it in front of Yun Qi: "Guess, what's in here?"

Su Luo's eyes sparkled as her expression filled with happiness.

Immersed in the future beautiful life she yearned for, she did not see the treacherous radiance flash in Yun Qi's eyes.

"The Dragon Ring? So you've already gotten a hold of it? How could it

be possible? When did this happen?” Yun Qi’s up turned eyes narrowed with an intoxicating gentleness.

“Right when you were still on your mission in the West, I was lucky, so I got it. So now, you’ll quit with me, right? Su Luo held Yun Qi’s hand with hopeful eyes, “After returning the Dragon Ring to the organization, we’ll then settle down here and happily live our lives here, okay?”

“Alright.” He gently kissed Su Luo’s smooth forehead and forcefully held her within his bosom as he tightly embraced her.

As she nestled on his collarbone, Su Luo closed her eyes and blissfully smiled.

They were childhood sweethearts of ten or so years who had hand in hand, walked through a hail of bullets. He was her most important family member, and also the person she trusted the most. She has already conceived his baby now, so once they quit the organization.... All of a sudden, Su Luo’s entire body stiffened as her confused eyes filled with bitter pain. She opened her eyes wide with incredulous despair.

She pushed Yun Qi away and looked down.

A sharp dagger had pierced through her chest. As blood unceasing flowed out from the dagger to wet the thin white skirt, the blood spilling out from the chest was similar a Red Spider Lily in full bloom; passionate yet strange.

As an assassin, the accuracy of Yun Qi’s dagger did not have the

slightest trace of error.

Su Luo stumbled, kneeling on the ground filled with unorderedly crushed rocks as her beautiful eyes brimmed with surprised despair and disbelief. She honestly did not think that the man she trusted the most, who claimed that he loved her, would ruthlessly send her a dagger as her birthday present and stab her in the back!

The execution was emotionless and relentless.

Why.... She opened her mouth but could not utter a single sound because of her despair.

Yun Qi coldly ridiculed her as the corner of his mouth curled up: “Su Luo, you’re an absolute idiot. You know too many of the organization’s secrets, did you really think that the organization would let you off? And to even think about quitting, you’re too naive! Not only that, you’re so naive that you would believe that I’d actually quit with you?”

“...” Su Luo bitterly smiled in despair.

As per Yun Qi’s words, she really was too naive to actually believe that he would quit the organization with her.

“Don’t be this stupid in your next life!” Yun Qi picked up the small brocade box that fell on the floor. After coldly glancing at the hopelessly suffering Su Luo, he turned around decidedly left.

“Yun Qi, are you sure you’re not too naive?” Su Luo’s cold voice

resounded behind his back.

Yun Qi halted in his steps as Su Luo suddenly laughed out loud: “What did you think was in that brocade box?” Yun Qi opened the brocade box and his complexion suddenly changed, “Where’s the Dragon Ring? Where’d you hide it?”

There was a wealthy employer who put forth three billion US dollars and entrusted the organization to look for this Dragon Ring. If it could not be found in the end, not only would they not receive the money, the organization’s reputation would also be severely tarnished.

Su Luo stood on the edge of the steep cliff and looked down at the deep darkness. The corner of her mouth revealed a satisfied yet bleak smile that was as beautiful as the unstable blooming of a Queen of the Night: “Yun Qi, you’ll never be able to obtain the Dragon Ring. Also, don’t bother to cry at my tombstone or else you’ll taint my reincarnation cycle.”

While speaking, Su Luo abruptly leapt and her entire person plunged down into the darkness of the cliff.

And beneath the cliff, were raging waves of sea water that beat against the shore.

Chapter 02 – This is Simply Torture!

Time and space converted.

Blue Sky Continent.

Pain.

Su Luo felt a needle-like pain throughout her entire body, as if she had been run over by a heavy truck. It was so painful that her heart had almost stopped beating.

In a daze, she slowly opened her heavy eyelids. Seeing the dirty white gauze mosquito net above her head and a shabby quilt, she momentarily could not react.

“Su Luo you cheap slut, why aren’t you dead yet? Why did you even bother to wake up! Die die die!” A sharp, ear-piercing voice furiously shouted near Su Luo’s bed.

Su Luo realized that she was strengthless from head to toe. She weakly turned towards the direction of the voice.

There was a beautiful girl who looked to be around fourteen or fifteen years of age dressed in light purple fine gauze. Inserted in her hair that was rolled up in a bun was a precious butterfly hairpin and a jade hairpin. Her small face was slightly round and she had very delicate facial features.

The little girl was very beautiful, yet she was very malicious in her actions. At the moment, she was holding a needle that was usually used to sew the soles of a shoe. The needle was thick and glinted in the cold light.

With a sinister look in her eyes, she ruthlessly stabbed at Su Luo's body. She stabbed at the flesh hidden underneath the clothes so unless someone tore them open, outsiders would never be able to see them.

So painful! This is simply torture!

Su Luo wanted to say something, but discovered that her mouth had been gagged by a rag. She wanted to resist, but found out that she didn't even have the strength to lift a single finger.

Seeing that Su Luo had awoken, the malicious girl turned to face the other slightly larger girl and coldly commanded: "Third Sister, quickly beat, quickly beat her to death!"

Subsequently, this Third Miss did what she was told and forcefully swung the palm of her hand to slap Su Luo's face.

Su Luo's eyes gleamed with a frosty light: This maltreatment, these slaps; I, Su Luo, will remember all of them!

Su Luo could no longer take the continuous assault and finally sank into the darkness.

“Miss.... Uuu.... Miss, you must not die.....” The sound of the young female’s mournful weeping was miserable and it seemed that her throat had become hoarse due to her weeping.

Awakened by the sound of weeping and feeling that someone was forcefully shaking her, Su Luo faintly woke up.

“M-Miss?” Lu Luo who was sadly weeping raised her gaze and met Su Luo’s line of sight. Accompanied by the eye contact, her face immediately turned to that of pleasant surprise.

At this time, Su Luo also clearly saw the little girl before her eyes. She was approximately fourteen or fifteen years of age with facial features that could be considered to be graceful, but at the moment, her face was covered with red and swollen fingerprints. Both eyes swelled like a peach and she appeared to be in a tight spot.

Her vision shifted to the interior of the room. She discovered that the table was missing a leg, the chair was worn-out, and there wasn’t even a cup to drink water from the teapot. It seemed as if the entire room was a house in the slums of Africa.

Suddenly, Su Luo mind ached as memories flooded in like the surging of the tide.

Looks like she really did cross over.

This place was not a dynasty that she was familiar with, for was the Blue Sky Continent that never appeared in China’s history and was a

world that respected those with martial might.

The continent consisted of four countries. They were individually named Eastern Ling, Western Jin, Southern Feng, and Northern Mo. Together, the four countries drew a circle and in between them, was the legendary Dark Forest that was rampant with magic beasts. Unless one was a martial artist, entering was simply unthinkable.

As of now, Su Luo was in the Manor of the Eastern Ling Empire's Great General. Her father was Su Zian, the Great General who protected the empire and she, was the publically known strawbag fool of an idiot, the good-for-nothing Fourth Miss.

In the Blue Sky Continent, every child had to take an innate talent test at the age of five and this exam was so important that it was enough to determine a person's entire life.

Before this exam, Su Luo was the pride of the Su Family because at during her birth, even the heavens intervened with worldly phenomenons; a multicolored sky paved the roads in rainbow as a divine bird circled around the entire imperial capital. At that time, everyone believed that Su Family's Fourth Miss would become someone of importance.

But on the day of the aptitude test five years later, this Su Family's Fourth Miss who most had the greatest of expectations for, unexpectedly appeared to be nobody. Her innate talent was at a good-for-nothing zero and it was fundamentally impossible for her to practice martial arts!

As a result of the expectations being too high with the disparity too

wide, Su Zian threw Su Luo into the side courtyard under a fit of rage, leaving Su Luo to decide her own life and death. Su Luo's mother had also been abandoned and finally perished from depression.

Chapter 03 – I’ll Definitely Kill Her Next Time!

Could it be that she really was the legendary good-for-nothing? Su Luo gazed at the slow moving white cloud as a trace of a grim smile flashed in her eyes.

During the modern age, she, Su Luo had experienced ten or so years of the devil’s training. Even if her innate talent was zero, she could still break through and a piece of the sky would one day be hers!

She still recalled what had happened the day she crossed over, that scene of the two girls torturing her.

“Miss, Third Miss and Fifth Miss are taking a stroll in the gardens. The two did not bring any maids and I do not know what they are discussing.” Lu Luo entered carrying a small box, placed it on the table and took out the dishes one by one to arrange them on the table.

A plate of rotting vegetable leaves, a bowl of molding dried tofu, and two bowls of rice.

“Not eating, I’m stepping out first.” Su Luo pushed away the bowl and chopsticks as a hint of coldness flashed through her eyes. She, Su Luo had no skill aside from her love of holding grudges. And if a grudge existed it most certainly, must be avenged.

Inside the Flower Garden, Third Miss Su Wan and Fifth Miss Su Xi strolled along the Lotus Pond.

Fifth Miss Su Xi was born from the first wife so her status was high. Her innate talent had also astonished many at a young age; she was the darling of the entire Su Family.

Like Su Luo, Third Miss Su Wan was born from a mistress but her mouth was sweet and she usually used it to fawn over Su Xi. She gave priority to Su Xi so the two appeared to have quite a good relationship.

A faint sound came from Su Wan: “Fifth Younger Sister, I heard that damned girl woke up again?”

Su Xi sneered: “Her life is so cheap but when poisoned, she wasn’t poisoned to death and when beaten, she wasn’t beaten to death. How hateful!”

Su Wan asked again: “Then what do we do? Doesn’t it mean that the marriage is still....”

Su Xi fiercely fisted: “Don’t you worry, I’ll definitely kill her next time!”

At the moment, they were walking along the Lotus Pond. Su Xi walked along the inside while Su Wan walked on the outer side.

Su Luo held a stalk of rice straw in her mouth as she listened in to their discussion that plotted against her life. A glimmer of coldness flashed through her eyes. She’d like to see who would dare mess with her again!

I heard that Su Xi’s innate talent was extremely high and was already a second step Warrior. Although she did not have the ability to take her

revenge now, collecting a little bit of interest was no problem at all.

Su Luo hid behind the parasol tree as her eyes slyly gleamed.

With a whip of her sleeve, a small pebble coincidentally tumbled near Su Wan's foot.

Su Wan faced forward, so why would she take into account what was underneath her foot? She took a step and her balance immediately became unstable as she swayed in Su Xi's direction.

When one was about to fall, they would inevitably activate their instinct of grabbing anything near them that they could possibly hold on to, and Su Wan was fortunate enough to firmly grasp at Su Xi's sleeve.

What was quite unfortunate was when the two stumbled and tried to regain their balance, a shadowless foot suddenly kicked Su Wan in the buttocks!

The assault that came out of the blue took Su Wan by surprise so she once again, firmly grabbed onto Su Xi's dress.

Suddenly, the pair flew towards the canal with a bang and heavily fell in while looking like drowned rats.

As for Su Luo, she had already returned to hide behind the parasol tree with both hands clutching her chest as her eyes flowed with bright lights and vibrant colors. She waited there to watch the good show.

She want to see how marvelous the internal conflict between two close collaborators would be.

In this unexpected accident, Su Xi was actually an innocent bystander. But who told her to stubbornly want to offend the Su Luo who should never be offended?

She had been dragged in by Su Wan and plunged head first into the water. Her disposition was originally that of a pampered child so she immediately shouted in anger and swung her hand: “Third Elder Sister, what are you doing? Slipping and falling on your own is fine but why’d you have to drag me in with you!!!”

Chapter 04 – A Wicked Person Shall Be Harassed by One of the Same Kind

Su Wan surfaced with great difficulty and what greeted her was a heavy slap from Su Xi.

Su Wan was indeed innocent and she did not understand how she had slipped and fallen. But she was certain that she fell into the canal because someone had ruthlessly kicked her bottom.

Su Wan tightly head onto the right cheek that had been slapped and cried without tears: “Fifth Younger Sister, it’s not that I wanted to fall, someone kicked me.”

Su Xi sneered: “We’re the only two here, who did you think kicked you? Why haven’t you gone up there and given me a cloak to wear?”

“But....” Su Wan miserably lowered her eyelids.

The gauze fairy robe was now tightly plastered on her body and her figure was clearly displayed in such fine detail that her inner red undergarments were distinctly seen. If she went out like this and was seen by someone, wouldn’t she lose too much face?

“How about we call for someone?” Su Wan weakly proposed after thinking for quite a while as she held her head.

“No! If a man answered our call, what will we ever do if we’ve been

completely seen? Go quickly!” Su Xi had cruelty written all over her face!

“N, no....” Su Wan desperately shook her head and refused to agree no matter what.

“Then strip off your clothes and give them to me for me to wear!” Su Xi panted with rage and started to pull at Su Wan’s outer clothing.

“Fifth little sister, stop, please stop....” Su Wan tightly hugged her stomach, as if she was unwilling to let go even if she died. She only had one layer of outer gauze and inside that were her undergarments!

“Then why don’t you hurry and go?!” Su Xi relentlessly pushed Su Wan in the direction of land.

The Su Wan standing ashore with her clothes plastered all over her body had her two little grapes blown by the wind. They immediately became erect by the wind as if they were arrogant warlords.

She shivered due to the cold and ran as if her life depended on it.

However, at the same time, it was not known why but the trees suddenly ignited in flames.

Distant cries sounded out: “Fire.... The trees are on fire.... Quickly, we must extinguish the fire....”

The little grove just happened to be near the lotus pond. Its

surroundings were obvious at a glance. There were no fake hills or fake stones; it was fundamentally impossible to take cover.

Soon after, a countless number of people bounded in that direction. Scared out of her wits, Su Wan paled as both of her hands protected her chest and quickly spun around in place.

“Run! Run quickly!” Su Xi loudly urged from within the lotus pond. If you don’t run now, it’ll be too late!

But it was already too late now.

The sound of numerous footsteps closing in was heard afterwards. Su Wan trembled in fright and she subconsciously went in the direction of the canal to jump in once more.

With a bang, the splashing of waves rose high in the air.

Su Luo almost laughed out loud.

But this decision of Su Wan’s shouldn’t be considered to be foolish. After all, the pond’s water wasn’t deep and one could stand in it with both legs. Not only that, within the pond bloomed many water lilies. If they hid behind them, if one wasn’t seriously trying to find them there, it was extremely unlikely for others to discover them.

“Why did you come in again!” Su Xi raged so hard that her hair almost stood up on end. She swung heavily to slap at Su Wan’s face.

Su Wan was also unhappy: “Fifth little sister, don’t be so unreasonable!” She should also be a little angry, right?

Su Xi viciously glared: “Unreasonable? Who’s unreasonable? If you didn’t drag me in here, would I be in this situation? You. Keep this in mind, once I get out, I’ll definitely will not let you off!”

“But I didn’t do it on purpose, someone really did push me in!”

“Who pushed you, I’d like you to bring them out for me to see!”

Ignoring the numerous footsteps, the two sisters started to immediately quarrel in the canal.

With an evil smile, Su Luo coldly watched this hard to come by show of the two sister’s savage fight. She looked forward to what would follow next on this program, for it would certainly be marvelous. Only then would it not waste the fire that she had run to set.

Chapter 05 – The Impeccably Handsome Youngster

Attired in white clothing, Nangong Liuyun leisurely sat at a place not too far from the lotus pond's lush trees. His beautiful face slightly curled up into a curve as his intelligent eyes brimmed with overflowing interest; one hundred percent interest.

It seems like today's visit to the Great General's Manor was indeed not a bad decision. Chancing upon this sort of show was actually unexpected. He was never aware of the fact that the Great General's daughters were so amusing.

The rumored stupid idiot was actually this quick-witted and clever; and the one who was typically praised to the skies had been reduced to such a state.

Nangong Liuyun's gaze travelled towards Su Luo's direction and rubbed at his bright and clean chin in interest.

This girl was so young, but her mind was extremely clever to produce such a crafty scheme. Her skills were pretty good to look at too.

As for her appearance.... Nangong Liuyun examined this girl in detail.

No more than fourteen or fifteen with a careless smile on her face. A pair of charmingly beautiful clear eyes that flowed with brilliant light and vibrant colors. But there was a separate layer inside her eyes that reflected a grim determined darkness. It was as dark as an abyss and it also appeared to be impossible for one to tread into the depths of her

heart.

Nangong Liuyun's eyes flashed with a trace of playfulness, he arrived at a conclusion: This girl is definitely sinisterly cunning, enjoys plotting against others, likes to hide in secret places from others, and she was a person who would still wear that slight smile even if she killed another person.

She was precisely the same as him, it was just too interesting.

Although Nangong Liuyun suddenly sensed that he found one of the same type, a wonderful feeling of finding the similar type of person that could only be found after searching everywhere throughout the entire world, this kind of unprecedented feeling he had towards Su Luo made him immediately brim with interest.

At the moment, Su Luo suddenly sensed a trace of wrongness. She discovered that there appeared to be a scorching gaze that firmly locked upon her.

Su Luo raised her head to scout, only to discover an impeccably handsome youngster reclining atop the tallest parasol tree with a playful arc that curled at the corner of his mouth.

Only to see him dressed in a gorgeous white robe with light phoenix-like eyes that slightly narrowed. He was an unrivaled beauty of the mortal world and on his face, the curled corners of his mouth evoked a demonic charm. He was reclining against the tree's highest branch and was supported atop it. The blossoms of pure white translucent Snowball gently fluttered about from the Snowball tree. That scenery was as

romantic as it was beautiful, and at the moment, he resembled a pretty boy who had just come out of a manhua.

His bright eyes were clear and penetrating, as if he clearly understood everything. While his gaze stared fixedly at Su Luo, the corners of his mouth carried a trace of a charmingly wicked smile, and the meaning behind this smiling expression seemed to be rather deep.

“See something good?” He opened his mouth and asked, with an expression that seemed to contain pure joy.

Although these were merely three words, it held a double entendre.

He could be referring to this amusing play or it was possible that he was asking whether his looks were good, or perhaps he was asking about both.

Su Luo narrowed her eyes.

When did this guy appear? Before or after she came here? She actually did not sense him at all.

Was her vigilance too low, or is it that his martial art cultivation was too high? Since she knew that she was always on guard, it must be that his martial arts were too high.

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth slowly bent as she coldly replied, “Seen enough?”

In regards to a person who had appeared without being invited but still was calm and unruffled while watching her play, Su Luo possessed a trace of hostility.

Surprise flashed in Nangong Liuyun's heart and his pitch-black inky phoenix eyes met with Su Luo's beautiful eyes. All of a sudden, he discovered that the frequency of the pulsing heartbeat within his chest became a bit faster than its former speed.

The corners of his mouth sketched a playful smile: "What a treacherously sinister woman."

Su Luo slightly raised her eyebrows. Wearing a smile that was not yet a smile, she answered in turn: "What a gentlemanly man of high morals."

A blossoming laugh came from Nangong Liuyun after hearing Su Luo's retort. It was a gentle and melodic low sound that was demonically charming, "No, no, this king is the same kind of person you are."

Su Luo once again sneered at his implication, which also meant that she was sneering at herself.

Chapter 06 – Winner is King

What a two-faced crafty man. Wait.... He referred to himself as this king, so was he a duke?

(TL: This king = arrogant way of referring to oneself, but is most commonly used for by high nobles)

“Come.” The demonically enchanting low voice in front of her passed through the side of her ears.

Su Luo slightly knitted her brow. Come? If she came after he had told her to come over, wouldn't she lose a lot of face?

What's more, the forking branch on that tree barely had any space, where would she sit if she went over there? Could it be that he wanted her to sit on his lap?

But before she reached a conclusion, the scene before her suddenly blurred, her body moved, and in another blink of an eye, she was already atop the tree. Not only that, she was actually settled within the arms of this man she had just met!

How could Su Luo possibly let someone else take advantage of her whenever they pleased? She subconsciously lifted her dagger to slice at the other party's artery in the neck — However, Nangong Liuyun's reaction ought to be considered to be quite fast. Su Luo's hand had not even streaked across, and he had already single-handedly forced her hand behind her back.

This posture, caused Su Luo's well-rounded bosom to stand erect as it impressively bulged and swelled.

Su Luo had never expected such a large discrepancy between her martial arts and this guy's. She was right in front of him, but she could not even deal one blow!

Nangong Liuyun laughed with unrestrained wickedness. His slender and smooth finger leisurely stroked Su Luo's creaming complexion. His elegantly pink lips lifted into a wicked smile as it carried a hint of unbridled arrogant air.

"Girl, the current you is no match for this king. What, do you still want to continue?" Nangong Liuyan's rich and low voice carried a trace of wicked charm that was extremely pleasant to hear.

"Let me go!" Su Luo warned in a stern but low voice because in the corner of her eyes, she saw that the approaching people had almost arrived.

"Girl, we're free and bored, how about we play a game?" Nangong Liuyun happily asked in his enchanting low voice as his eyes filled with pure interest.

Su Luo cautiously thought about it and thought that it wouldn't be different from what was happening now, so she coldly nodded: "Speak."

"Then let's gamble on the two in that pond, if they could hide without being discovered, it would be your win. If they cannot avoid discovery, it

would be this king's win. How about it?"

"What would be at stake?" Su Luo was extremely poor, so she couldn't gamble with money, but she could use a sleight of hand.

"Winner is king, loser.... warms the bed?" Nangong Liuyun's eyes pricked in extreme interest at his own proposal.

Su Luo's expression chilled. She coldly glanced at Nangong Liuyun with an frank expression, as if she was looking at an idiot.

Nangong Liuyun looked hurt as he covered his chest and weakly suggested: "Winner lies down.... loser falls down?"

Su Luo was completely speechless! Was this man not the least bit ashamed? It's only the first time they've met, alright? It was the first time they have ever spoken, but how could he be so frank? Even she, a modern woman, felt herself blush.

"This won't do, and that also won't do."

Nangong Liuyun languidly fiddled with the hair beside her ear as he spoke in a calm and composed manner, "Could it be that you insist on the winner being king... and the loser becoming queen? If you insist, that is also something not impossible."

Su Luo rolled her eyes in displeasure.

“Become king, become queen. You’re not the crown prince right? Yet you’re not worried about the wind of rumors cutting your tongue.” Su Luo coldly ridiculed him with a roll of her eyes and bluntly said: “Is it really that complicated over there? If I win, you’ll have to owe me a favor. If I lose....”

“Then you’ll have to give this king a kiss.” Nangong Liuyun quickly answered with not one bit of loss.

Why does this man act as if he’ll die if he doesn’t get to take advantage of me? I seriously want to give him a good thrashing!

Su Luo glared and as a result, allowed him to clearly see her rage.

His eyes laughed with careless leisure, but at the same time, it contained a kind of incomparable sharpness that he was unable to conceal. This person effortlessly released an air that suppresses another and exuded an aura of a domineering king.

Chapter 07 – Then Give This King a Kiss

“Okay.” Su Luo slowly agreed after quite a long time.

Whatever you say, these conditions favored her. Just a mere kiss can't hurt right? The modern her played around sometimes, so it wasn't as if she wasn't experienced.

The current her didn't have anything and just happened to need a sucker to drop in her door.

Thus, the two treacherous male and female with ulterior motives began their first confrontation.

Su Jingyu's party hurriedly approached.

Su Jingyu was the eldest son of the Su Family. Born from the first lady with a not too shabby innate talent; he was twenty years old yet was already a third step expert, a level that most of the younger generation wished to be at.

He didn't come alone but instead brought along a formidable group of people. The spectacle was quite grand.

Su Xi was mad to the point of no return but there was no way out of the situation. Fearful of exposing any clue of her being there, she hid her entire body behind the lotus flowers. In her heart, she had already yelled at Su Wan to within an inch of her life.

She never expected that she, Su Xi, would one day be put in such a difficult situation!

If the one coming was only Su Jingyu, then it was fine, but he just had to bring along His Highness, the crown prince, and other sons of various noble families. If she were to go out now and was seen by them while looking like this, it was guaranteed that not even a quarter of an hour would pass before news of this would spread throughout the entire imperial capital. When that time comes, how could she, Su Xi, ever intermingle with others in the imperial capital?

Su Xi furiously glared at Su Wan and pledged that after she goes out, she would never let this Su Wan bitch get away with it!

Su Wan was also mad to the point of being half dead. She too, never expected that her luck to take a turn for the worse.

The situation before her eyes was taking a turn for the worse and the people who were coming were increasing by the moment. If they were to be discovered like this.... should they say that they were taking a swim?

But it was spring, and not even summer.

What to do, what exactly should she do? Su Wan's anxiousness was comparable to disorderly ants.

Su Luo curled the corner of her mouth into a contemplating smile as she looked at the entourage of youngsters in bright clothes.

This was actually unexpected. She never would have thought that the crowd of people who came over would actually let Su Xi and Su Wan rack their brains, to then stealthily shrink back behind the lotus flowers. Su Luo then understood that the status of those in that group ought to be considerably high.

The one at the head ought to be the crown prince. He wore a brocade robe of canary yellow with a soaring dragon on his belt. His eyebrows seemed to be meticulously groomed, and his high bridged nose was above thin pale lips that were curled up to display an incomparably privileged air of haughtiness. As he wore this unbridled arrogant flair, he appeared to be both cruel and soft. It only took one look to see that his temper was not good.

Su Jingyu wore a dark green brocade robe with a crystal jade belt. He had a bright handsome face, sharp eyebrows and starry eyes, but at the moment, his eyebrows were tightly knitted into an unpleased expression.

The crown prince bursted into laughter after seeing the small fire: “Jingyu, what is your manor doing? Isn’t this just playing with fire?”

This was not limited to just the crown prince. The younger male generation of various noble families that were behind the crown prince also began to laugh immediately afterwards.

Because what was before them was a truth that was indeed worthy of being called a joke. Not only that, it only took a glance to clearly see that it was deliberately done on purpose.

Where was the fire here? It was clearly a hoax.

What was present before their eyes now, was just a medium sized bonfire. It was burning atop a pile of withered grass that was easily combustible, and was covered with a layer of fresh green leaves. It was known to all that if wood was not completely dried in the sun, the plume of smoke would be especially large after a period of ignition. And in doing so, it was obvious that the other party had done this to lure them here.

At this time, Su Jingyu also had some suspicions in his heart. The pretty space between his eyebrows opened up as he broke into a smile and said to the crown prince, “It’s probably a servant who accidentally started this.”

The crown prince stroked his chin as his gaze swept back and forth at the scene before him: “Oh? The General Manor’s servants are actually this heaven-daringly audacious?”

Su Jingyu’s heart stopped, and then hurriedly explained: “It could also be the result of my younger sister’s playful mischief. Since it is alright now, let’s go back? Jingyu is a bit unsure of the homework Teacher assigned today, and it just so happens that I could ask Your Highness, the crown prince, for a bit of guidance.”

Chapter 08 – The Hot Lingering Breath

Su Jingyu sensed a feeling of wrongness in his heart. This matter was too strange. He had a hunch that if he stayed here any longer, something he wouldn't want to see would occur.

The crown prince and him both studied at the imperial capital's Advanced Institute and were even in the same department. The two were in the wind element department. With that added to Su Jingyu's painstakingly ass-kissing, he and the crown prince had become close as a result and was already in the crown prince's clique.

The crown prince laughed bleakly: "To have the impertinence to play this kind of prank in the Great General's Manor, they truly have a heavens amount of nerve to do so. Jingyu, you must investigate this closely."

The five surrounded the highest tree's forking branch as the lush vegetation hid Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun's figures. The two's breathing were extremely light, so they had not discovered them yet.

Suddenly, Su Luo felt warmth at her nape. A hot lingering breath near the edge of her earlobe.

Before she had time to react, Nangong Liuyun's low voice playfully asked: "Do you want to see an even more marvelous scene?"

"Oh?" Su Luo shifted her body forward and looked up at him from a distance as she turned her head around to look at his shiny glittering

eyes that glinted with resplendent starlight.

His phoenix-like eyes now resembled the luster of seawater, calm and serene. The delicate skin on his face was as beautiful as porcelain china. It was as if he was one of Shangri-la's exiled immortals; allowed to look at, but not allowed to be trifled with.

Nangong Liuyun sized up the girl before his eyes at a close range.

Bright eyes white teeth, creamy white skin, a small face without any makeup that could defeat one that wore it, looks as if she was the morning dew of spring's sunshine and was a refreshing person. Especially those eyes that contained a stream of sparkling water; when her beautiful eyes wandered, they brimmed with a touching vividness.

Her eyes were clear and indifferent while her expression had an even more prominent apathy to it. The corner of her mouth was curled into a cold arc like a white cloud that had transformed into misty nothingness. She was like the calm tide without the slightest ripple or wave.

A thought suddenly flashed in Nangong Liuyun's mind. If I smash this deep tranquility in her eyes, wouldn't that be quite amusing?

All of a sudden, he raised his strong and powerful slender arm, and used the other white and smooth finger to lift Su Luo's pointy chin as the thick shadow of vegetation covered Su Luo.

And it was at this critical moment that Su Luo used a mere palm to separate his and her lips.

“The game’s outcome has not been decided yet, why are you so anxious?” With a smile that was not yet a smile, Su Luo took a sidelong glance before asking that in a low voice.

“Outcome? That would only take a thought.” The edge of Nangong Liuyun’s pink lips perked up into a playful smiling expression. He slightly raised his dense sword-like eyebrows and stopped moving. Suddenly, a screech came from not too far away.

At this moment, the crown prince and Su Jingyu had already turned around. But they had only walked a few steps before hearing a sharp painful shout from the lotus pond area that momentarily stopped every one of their footsteps.

Su Luo was puzzled. She looked into the distance and saw a clear vision of fresh blood on Su Wan’s forehead. She couldn’t help but be stupefied in place for a moment. Afterwards, she turned to glare at Nangong Liuyun as she gritted her teeth in extreme anger with a pause in each word: “You. Cheat. Ted!”

“Was there a rule that said we can’t cheat?” Nangong Liuyun started to shamelessly act dumb.

Su Luo helplessly rolled her eyes at Nangong Liuyun, but the guy actually let out a resplendent light laugh. The handsome face that was beautiful beyond compare was similar to a Queen of the Night in full bloom, an alluring rare sight.

The Su Wan who had been hit by a pebble subconsciously screamed out

loud. She covered her bleeding head as her entire body almost jumped up from the shock.

She's seriously a pig! And was the most stupid one too!

Su Xi was so angry that she wished she could slap this Third Elder Sister, who had attracted trouble after trouble to her, to death. She originally believed that today's misfortunes had be enough, but never expected that the god of bad luck would still be so kind to her!

“Who's there?!” Su Jingyu asked in a loud voice towards the empty lotus pond.

Chapter 09 – The Game’s Outcome Has Yet To Be Decided

The crown prince revealed a face full of wonder and appeared to have an extreme interest in this matter. He stared unblinkingly at the lotus pond with sparkling eyes.

“Come out! If you don’t come out, I’ll attack!” Su Jingyu stood in front of the crown prince to protect him, ready to attack the enemy at anytime.

As expected, this kind of action gained a favorable impression from the crown prince. He patted Su Jingyu on the shoulder, indicating that he could deal with this by himself.

Inside the lotus pond.

At the moment, Su Xi was at a complete loss. If she came out now in front of the crown prince, she would lose too much face. She had coveted the title of Crown Princess for a very long time. If she came out now, she would never possess it.

Fine, since this disaster had been caused by Third Sister, then she’ll have to personally go settle this herself.

“After they leave, remember to give me that cloak! Or else I’ll beat you to death!” After being in the water for so long, Su Xi’s lips somewhat trembled. After saying that, she lifted Su Wan’s belt and tossed her ashore.

Su Wan's "Ahhh—" was similar to a dying pig's screech. She carried water droplets on her body as she flew across the sky in an arc until finally falling to the ground with a bang. Her jade body laid in a disarray on the bank as she completely wet the ground's soil.

What was even more unfortunate was that her belt had been pulled out by Su Xi. She was originally relaxed but now that she had encountered such a loss and landed on the ground for a period of time, her belt dispersed as the front of her clothes immediately opened to suddenly reveal the bright red undergarments inside her clothing and her slender jade legs.

The undergarment that covered her chest was opened wide in exposure as the jade peaks of her bosom's mountains became faintly discernible, and invited crime.

Su Jingyu's eyes were wide open. It was simple unbelievable! His mouth was opened so wide that even an hen's egg could be stuffed in.

No matter what, he never would've expected why his third younger sister would suddenly appear on the bank, and would even appear in such a humiliating way. What's more, she appear like this in front of the crown prince.

Could it be that she was expressing her feelings of affection for the crown prince this way?

This is simply just... simply just.... too shameless!

Blue veins popped up on Su Jingyu's forehead. He took off his outer clothing and tossed it onto Su Wan's body and covered up that shameless body as he roared coldly: "Why haven't you gotten up yet?"

He felt like he had never lost this much face in front of the crown prince before and now, he felt like his face had combusted.

Unfortunately, Su Wan did not answer his words. She still laid in the same place in front of everyone as they stood in a circle and watched, because at the moment, Su Wan had already fainted.

"Your Highness, my younger sister's mischief has stirred up trouble and has accidentally offended you. By all means, please do not be offended." Su Jingyu gnawed his back teeth and forced himself to adopt a rigid smiling expression as he tried to mediate the situation.

He said that on one side as he gestured at his servants to hurriedly carry his third younger sister on the other.

The crown prince heartily laughed and appeared to be in a joyful mood. He clapped Su Jingyu on the shoulder like an older brother and smiled: "That was your family's astonishingly gifted little sister? The way she came out was quite.... Hmm, special?"

The crown prince had actually seen Su Xi before, but because Su Wan had been flung up, her face had been covered with disheveled hair. Since she had crawled up like a water ghost, the crown prince had not distinctively seen her face before Su Jingyu covered Su Wan's face with his robe.

So the crown prince did not actually see which Su Manor's young Miss it was.

But the words the crown prince had said, had their own intentions.

The words the crown prince had said made Su Xi, who was in the lotus pond, become so depressed that she raged with fire! She angrily stomped her foot in the water.

What's wrong with the crown prince's eyes, that was obviously Third Elder Sister alright? How could it be her, Su Xi! Even though she was secretly happy that the crown prince had remembered her, how could she forgive that he had mistaken that sorry of a figure for her.

Chapter 010 – What An Awesome Big Brother!

Su Xi really wanted to jump over there and loudly announce that it wasn't her, wasn't her.... but under these circumstances, she had no other choice but to remain hidden behind the lotus flowers.

But she still had an awesome big brother.

Seeing that his most precious little sister had been misunderstood, he hurriedly laughed and explained: "Crown prince your highness, the one there a moment ago wasn't my fifth younger sister. My fifth younger sister is gentle and ladylike with an extraordinary innate talent. She doesn't even have enough time to cultivate so how could she be mischievous enough to cause trouble."

A peculiar light flashed through the crown prince's eyes: "Oh? Then who that was the one earlier?"

Su Jingyu was at a loss. He secretly scolded himself for being a dumbass, why did he say that it was one of his family's sisters and not just randomly blame one of the servant girls? Now that the crown prince is looking into the matter, how was he going to respond?

Father always regarded Third Sister highly. Not only that, Third Sister was always close with his mother and sister. If it was possible to not sacrifice her, he mustn't offer her up to be slaughtered.

All of a sudden, a bright light sparked in Su Jingyu mind as he realized a way in which he could get the best of both worlds. Due to his emotional

excitement, he slightly raised his voice: “Actually.... I won’t keep Your Highness in the dark, that girl is in fact.... actually....”

“You talk and break off again as if you’re unwilling to speak the truth. Don’t tell me that girl is actually....” The crown prince’s deep abyssal eyes flickered as his voice lowered and appeared to carry some sort of suggestion.

“Yes, Your Highness is brilliant. That girl is in fact my good-for-nothing Fourth Sister!” After Su Jingyu said those words, he immediately relaxed and felt as if the sky had brightened. Even the gently blowing wind had a fresh and clean smell to it.

Fourth Sister?

The Su Luo who sat atop the forking branch seriously wanted to explode and burst into obscene language.

Her rigid elder brother, who was suppose to be a person of high morals, was actually this shameless! To actually blame this on an innocent, dragged her into it, and made her a scapegoat! And even said that the scandalous person was actually her!

Now she finally understood where her notorious reputation came from. As long as any one of the sisters made an error, they would tell outsiders that it was her fault and fasten the culprit hat on top of her head.

Su Luo’s eyes glittered with frost and snow. They were infused with a deep cold radiance. Good, very good. Su Jingyu you have been put into

memory by this lady. This lady here is extremely petty. As for this vengeance, just you wait.

Nangong Liuyun looked at the girl's flickering complexion in amusement as his rosy-red lips perked up into a smile. His abnormally enchanting low voice carried a hint of sensuality: "Girl, you're not going out there to clear up the misunderstanding?"

"If I go out now, that big brother of mine would certainly be startled, then dismiss me as if I was a servant girl. Would you believe that?" Su Luo's smile was as beautiful as a flower while her white teeth glinted with a cold radiance.

"But if you don't go out, this crown princess position of yours would never be considered. Would you believe that? Nangong Liuyun's red lips were the color of blood; it was a bright dazzling color. His eyes clear and deep eyes could directly penetrate one's heart.

Crown princess? Su Luo went deep into thought and finally discovered the truth from the memory of the former owner of this body.

It was actually real. Because it had been said that the original Su Luo was the reincarnation of a bird god, as a result, the empress engaged her to the crown prince. After all these years, even if her reputation was so poor that the wedding contract was so shaky that it was about to collapse, it still had not yet been officially terminated

So Su Jingyu's lie, which framed her in front of the crown prince, first brushed away any suspicions about Su Xi and Su Wan's involvement on one hand, second, settled the difficult problem the crown prince raised,

and third, naturally helped his precious sister in opening a path to her future.

Because only when she, Su Luo, made way on that road, would Su Xi have the chance to become crown princess.

Su Jingyu ah, Su Jingyu.... Tell me, what am I going to do with you?

Chapter 011 – He’s Prince Jin?!

Even though I really don't like the method you used, the triggered results are pleasing to me. She seriously had no interest in being this prince's crown princess.

If you really want to compare, although this self proclaimed prince standing before my eyes is devilish, strong, overbearing, rude, and enjoys taking advantage of a situation.... He still gave Su Luo a better impression than the crown prince.

“Poor girl, you're about to become the sacrificial lamb.” Nanqong Liuyun pretended to be sympathetic as he tapped Su Luo's delicate pink nose. Although he remained expressionless, a smile of satisfaction flashed across his eyes.

“Do you need a friendly reminder?” The corner's of Su Lou's mouth curled with a smile that wasn't quite a smile. “The person you are currently holding is your future sister-in-law.”

“Wrong!” Nanqong Liuyun's eyes shone brightly as he slightly exposed his white teeth. “The person this king is holding is my future princess consort.

Su Luo silently looked to the sky: “Such a flat joke, it's not even a little bit funny.” She was the legendary good-for-nothing from the rumors and was born from a concubine. Furthermore, her position of the crown prince's fiancée was on the verge of being withdrawn. How could this lowly prince dare marry her?

Up until now, Su Luo still did not know the powerful background of the man holding her. She still thought that Nangong Liuyun was one of those little lords.

Let's not talk about the heated exchange between the two in front of the lotus pond, after the crown prince discovered the truth that Su Luo was that shameless girl, his whole demeanor brightened as his eyes flashed.

Having learned this truth, nothing else mattered.

The crown prince happily left taking the good news with him. With a wave of his sleeves, not even his shadow was left.

The people in front of the Lotus Pond had already left.

A gentle breeze made ripples on the water's surface

In the lotus pond stood a shivering Miss Su Xi.

Waiting from afternoon till dusk, then from dusk to nightfall, Su Xi waited until her face become pale, lips turned purple, but her third sister still did not come to bring her clothing.

Poor Su Xi did not know that when she pushed Su Wan, she used too much force and thus knocked Su Wan out into a dead faint.

Su Xi in the lotus pond become so angry that she almost start stomping her feet. In her heart she started to hate Su Wan. She silently vowed that after she goes back she will not let Su Wan off.

Waiting until the night became completely black, using the cover of darkness, Su Xi finally jumped out of the lotus pond and onto the ground.

Suddenly, nearby a bloodcurdling scream cried : “Ghost!!”

Following the sound of the scream, Su Xi slowly turned her head toward the sound, her face hideously distorted, eyes crimson from anger.

She had been picked on enough for today!

She turned around and was about to unleash her anger at the luckless footman when she realized that the footman had already passed out after being scared silly by the “ghost”. Now with no way to unleash her frustration, Su Xi turned her eyes away and used the cover of the darkness to quickly flee toward her courtyard.

The remotest small courtyard in Su Manor.

Su Luo had a sliver of grass in her mouth, with both hands behind her head, as she laid on the roof with both feet propped up, giving off a leisurely relaxed impression

She leisurely reviewed what happened this morning. When thinking about how both Su Xi and Su Wan was embarrassed she become happy.

Thinking about future fights and grievances between the two made her even happier.

While thinking, suddenly an unparalleled face flashed across Su Luo's musing

Especially that pair of bewitching eyes, black as ink, with bright light shining from the obsidian iris full of pride.

Although his laugh seemed to be careless, it hid the strength and majesty of an eagle; compelling, disdainful yet at the same time, gave off a strong domineering attitude.

She described the guy to Lu Luo, who immediately become so excited that the bowl in her hand started to shake.

She excitedly said: "Mistress, if my guess isn't wrong, then the one you meet is His Highness Prince Jin! Yes it must be Prince Jin!"

Chapter 012 – Submit to me and prosper or oppose me and perish

“Is Prince Jin really famous?” Su Luo asked, even her body’s previous spirit didn’t know much about Prince Jin.

“Of course Prince Jin is famous, in this world there is no one more famous than Prince Jin. It is said that Prince Jin’s talent is number one on the continent and in the last 5000 years, his talent is ranked second. Miss, what do you say.”

“...” Listed as number two in the last 5000 years? Isn’t it too exaggerated?

“Obviously its not only because of this. Right now, Prince Jin is a tri-elemental mage. Three elements! Most people don’t even have one element, but Prince Jin is cultivating all three elements at the same time!” Lu Luo’s face was full of worship. With starstruck eyes, she continued. “It has been said that tri-elemental mages have many opportunity to achieve divinity. The number one talent had long ago achieved divinity and obtained eternal life.”

Prince Jin, Nangong Liuyun, is that powerful? If that was true, then “winner becomes king, loser becomes queen” is not something he would careless throw around. With his talent, it wouldn’t be hard for him to steal the throne.

While Su Luo was still engrossed in these thoughts, a magnified face suddenly appeared before her eyes.

The narrow and elegant face, under the perfectly shaped eyebrows with a pair of black godlike eyes, looked like the work of a master sculptor.

She recently saw this perfect face this afternoon, so she could not have mistaken this person.... Unless this was an illusion?

Su Luo was thinking about using her hands to rub her eyes but a large pair of hands grabbed hold of her delicate hands. Nangong Liuyun's pair of obsidian eyes observed Su Luo with a hint of mysterious smile. "What, do you not recognize this king?"

"Nangon Liuyun?"

"Sure enough, this king is already in your heart, otherwise you would not impatiently inquire about this king. Am I right?" Nangong Liuyun's thin masculine red lips bent into a silly smile.

Su Luo stared at him unblinkingly as she stressed each sentence. "It is said that Nangong Liuyun is coldly arrogant, haughty, cruel, stern, and obsessive about maintaining his personal space. If anyone touches his hand, no matter who it is, he will cut off their hand. If someone accidentally bumped into him, no matter whom, he would make mincemeat out of them.... Are you really that Prince Jin?"

Su Luo's gorgeous eyes gazed at the large hand holding her own. Her voice was crystal clear as the corners of her mouth tilted into a relaxed smile.

Nangong Liuyun leisurely glanced at Su Luo with a pair of piercing eyes that glowed like the eyes of a wild wolf; frigid and searing.

At the moment, he was unlike the lazy laidback person from the afternoon. Now, he seemed more serious and vigilant.

At this moment, a gust of freezing wind started to surround the courtyard all the way up to the roof. This wind seemed to condense the surrounding air into ice and made it hard for people to breath.

His forbidding atmosphere containing a barely suppressed killing intent, chilling bloodthirsty, and a “submit to me and prosper or oppose me and perish” kind of domineering air. It seemed like if he stamped his foot, this entire Eastern Ling Empire would be shaken by a level three earthquake.

Under his forceful and domineering gaze, Su Luo’s gaze was as clear as water. Its surface was as calm as ice; placid, tranquil and composed.

Suddenly, his mouth curved into a bemused expression and then the weather immediately changed from hazy frost to clear blue skies. The ice seem to melt into bubbling spring water full of blooming flowers.

Nangong Liuyun’s laugh was like the cherry blossoms in March; gentle, beautiful and intoxicating.

His smooth white hands gently held her delicate jade-like hands as he smiled tenderly. “Girl, what are you afraid of? It’s not as if this king is going to eat you.”

In this staring contest of clashing wills, no one was able to get the upper hand in this silent war. Nangong Liuyun was pleasantly surprised by this result. He thought that he had perhaps accidentally discovered a rare pearl, or a jadeite within a pile of rocks.

Chapter 013 – Her heart went ba-thump ba-thump

Su Luo wanted to retract her hand but Nangong Liuyun was far too strong. The more she struggled, the stronger he gripped her hands.

“What do you want?” Su Luo exasperatingly asked. In this contest of strength, she could only helplessly admit defeat.

“I’m here to collect on the bet. Girl, are you conveniently pretending to be forgetful?”

“What bet?” Su Luo’s eyes glazed over and looked slightly confused.

“Girl, are you deliberately lying to me, what about this afternoon’s bet?” Nangong Liuyun said in an indulgent tone.

Su Luo coldly threw him a glance, and lightly said: “Su Wan was discovered while Su Xi safely escaped detection, so in regards to this afternoon’s bet, there is no winner or loser. We are even.”

Who knew that Nangong Liuyun would stick out his slender forefinger, and started to firmly shake it in front of Su Luo’s eyes while laughing evilly. “No, it’s more correct to say that you beat this king and this king beat you.” After saying this he indulgently rubbed her hair.

“You are purposefully being unreasonable. No one would interpret the result of the bet that way.” Su Luo angrily responded.

“In the beginning, you didn’t say that we can’t interpret the result of the bet this way.” In actuality, the one being unreasonable really was Prince Jin.

Su Luo tried to suppress her anger. This ruthlessly cunning fox, if he was living in modern era, how many people would be trapped by him?

“Be good, come here.” Prince Jin beckoned with his elegant slender fingers.

She wasn’t a little dog! Su Luo calmly crossed her chest, as her lips began to curve up into a faint smile.

As Prince Jin watched her actions, he raised his beautiful eyebrows. A pair of dark eyes like a bottomless lake fervently gazed at Su Luo.

Just when Su Luo was about to frown, she suddenly felt dizzy. When she opened her eyes again, she found that she had already dropped into his arms. Her eyes lifted upwards and was caught by his pair of alluring eyes.

When she meet that pair of outrageously gorgeous eyes, her heart suddenly started to skip in ba-thump ba-thumps.

That pair of outrageously gorgeous eyes, was unbelievably calm and even more unspeakable intense.

It was as if the gaze held in for 10,000 years.

Su Luo's throat seem to be blocked; it seemed as if she couldn't say a single word.

It took her a while to gather her bearings and she secretly warned herself about it in her heart.

Prince Jin leaned forward. His hot breath lingered around her sensitive earlobe as his pair of cold falcon-like eyes that contained a hint of mystery, started to shine with a dazzling and beautiful light.

“What...” before Su Luo could finish saying ‘what are you about to do’, Su Luo felt a shadow move toward her lips. It was aggressive, fast and unstoppable.

“Uu——” Her lips had been seized by a hot and soft sensation. Su Luo's could only feel her mind going blank, followed by a dizziness....

In front of her eyes was a magnified face. This outrageously handsome man was uninhibitedly kissing her with his eyes closed.

His strong and overbearing kiss was like an attacking thunderstorm that plundered her mouth.

Su Luo tried to resist by attempting to remove his hands, but she was unable to do so. Instead, the opposite occurred. Prince Jin's steel-like grip become even tighter that she almost cried out in pain.

The fervent kiss was earth-shattering, overbearing, and intense, but was at the same time, tender and gentle.

Su Luo almost lost herself for a moment when she melted into his gentle, yet passionate embrace.

The lack of oxygen forced her lips open as she gasped for breath. Her eyes were hazy from intoxication... When she finally recovered her mind, the light in her eyes sharpened!

“Slap——” She heavily slapped him across the face.

This guy, who does he think he is, how could he forcefully kiss her like this?

An angry aura that filled the air came from someplace hidden nearby. But with a casual wave of Prince Jin’s hand, the outrage in the air became tranquil.

Chapter 014 – Staring until the heart grew fearful

Ling Feng clenched both of his fists as he coldly measured up Su Luo with eyes full of fury but also a hint of admiration.

How precious is the existence of Prince Jin? And how extraordinary was his talent? Su Manor's strongest elder was only a 5th step expert, but their master Prince Jin is only 18 years old and was already at the 6th step!

From infancy till now, His Highness Prince Jin had never been so ill-treated before! Yet now, somebody actually hit him! This good-for-nothing girl without a trace of spiritual power actually dared to be so arrogant and belligerent!

Nangong Liuyun stretched out his slender fingers to slowly rub the cheek that was slapped as his pair of haughty, frigid falcon-like eyes gave off a threatening air.

In the hidden depths of his eyes, there was a diabolical glint that was as smooth as a mirror, unusually cold, and unfathomable when he intensely gazed at her beguilingly.

Because of his stare, her heart grew fearful.

A sense of panic flashed across Su Luo's heart, but quickly it calmed down. With her head held high and chest out, she meet his eyes refusing to yield.

Suddenly, Nangong Liuyun's frighteningly handsome countenance changed when his mouth slowly began to tilt up and burst open into a smile similar to a blooming Queen of the Night; flirtatious and magnificent.

“Clap—— Clap—— Clap——” The crisp sound of applause surrounded her until Nangong Liuyun's used his pair of pretty hands to pull Su Luo into his arms with just a tug.

“Girl, your fierce self confidence makes it hard for people to figure out how to deal with you. Should this king applaud your courage or laugh at your stupidity?” Nangong Liuyun's pair of devilishly enchanting eyes held a hint of frustration. “Don't you know that in this country, attacking a 5th step expert would get you the death penalty? You have already been sentenced to death, do you understand that?”

What the heck? She can't protest against being forcefully kissed? What kind of law is this? Why is it so biased for the strong elite?

Nangong Liuyun seemed to understand her unspoken words and vaguely smiled. “In this world that respects the powerful, the fist is law. It's not fair right? But who told you to be a good-for-nothing.”

Su Luo clenched her fists, unwilling to let go.

Nangong Liuyun gave her a harsh lesson in reality. Gave her a clear understanding that in this world, only a powerful fist would allow someone to have the right to speak.

Nangong Liuyun slightly narrowed his eyes; his nefariously alluring eyes scanned Su Luo from top to bottom. Then, he stroked her hand and touched her head.

“What are you doing?” Did he think that she was a doll?

Under the moonlight, Nangong Liuyun’s pair of beautiful ink-black irises held a hint of mystery. He suddenly stood up, pulled on Su Luo’s hands, and charmingly said. “Let’s go, I’m going to take you somewhere.”

“Where?” Su Luo looked at him with a perplexed expression.

At this moment, his eyes shone brightly with traces of flickering excitement. It was almost like he had suddenly found an explanation to something he was puzzling over.

“The Spirit Testing Temple.” Nangong Liuyun swiped aside a fine silken strand of black hair from her forehead. His perfect jawline was clearly distinct while his charming voice forcefully compelled her, making it impossible to refuse.

“The Spirit Testing Temple? What are we going to do there?” Su Luo knew this place, because that day when she received her results from the spirit testing temple, was when her life had drastically changed.

“What do you think people do at the Spirit Testing Temple?” Nangong Liuyun suddenly released the sound of a warm chuckle. His voice was friendly and relaxed; the sound was extremely beautiful, especially in the silence of the night sky.

“But doesn’t the Spirit Temple only allow people to enter on the first of the month?”

Nangong Liuyun playfully chuckled a few times. While poking at her smooth forehead, he indulgently said. “Silly girl, you must get used to the fact that some people, like this king, were born to receive such privileged treatment.”

Chapter 015 – The good-for-nothing is actually a super genius!

(1)

His jet-black hair poured down his back in silken threads in an indescribably stunning way. His tall, well-defined stature was elegant, and his slender body carried such noble bearing. Dressed in loose robes that gracefully danced in the air while the jade belt around his waist fluttered along with the wind, it was as if he was floating like an immortal.

His eyes filled with confidence and arrogance, as he emitted the noble and domineering air of a towering aloof god while his entire body exuded a brilliant light that dazzles the eyes.

It seems as if just by standing there, he could control the entire world, with its majestic mountains and endless rivers, in the palm of his hand.

“Why are you taking me there?” Su Luo mumbled. She always believed that the motive behind the seemingly innocent courting behavior was used to either rob or rape. She was always wary of such behavior.

“Didn’t you always want to go?” Prince Jin sucked on his crimson lips as his charming nefarious eyes drew her in. “This king has already collected his bet, you don’t want to collect yours?”

At this moment, Su Luo recalled that she could still suggest a condition.

So she may as well participate in this game of words, since it’s not as if

she was the one who put forth that condition out loud, right?

“Lets go!” Before Nangong Liuyun finished speaking, he had already hugged Su Luo to his chest. His body seem to grow wings as he rapidly flited through the air, almost as if his foot never touched the ground. He was like a dragonfly skimming the water’s surface that only left a reflection.

The wind rushed by her ears. Su Luo became curious and decided to open her eyes. She saw the passing scenery while flying through the air. Looking downwards, it seemed as if she could see the entire capital.

“Not afraid?” While effortlessly carrying her in the sky, Nangong Liuyun could actually talk smoothly without gasping for breath. Evidently, the level of his martial arts was high, high enough to be at an unfathomable peak, and unfathomable enough to be bottomless.

“I like it.” Su Luo truly enjoyed this kind of soaring across the horizon type of feeling. It was as if she could see every living thing in her vision as she looked down. She took a deep breath as her hand balled into a tight fist.

Unfortunately, she was a natural good-for-nothing, doomed to be unable to achieve the same height as Nangong Liuyun.

It seemed as if Nangong Liuyun could understood her silent wishful thoughts when he charmingly smiled and spoke with his enchantingly deep voice, “Once the test results are out, who says there wouldn’t be a reversal in the outcome?”

“If only!” Su Luo secretly encouraged herself in her heart.

In the distance, the outline of the temple could finally be spotted.

The temple was established at the very core of the imperial capital and its location was even more orderly than the imperial palace. From top to bottom, one could only see sharp pointed roofs, a wide plaza with a fountain at the center, and in front of the fountain were rows of master ranked sculpted statues.

Tiger, leopard, jackal, wolf... Even the continent’s magic beast sculptures could also be found here.

“We’re here.” Nangong Liuyun gently floated down with Su Luo and the two directly landed in front of the temple’s entrance.

Nangong Liuyun didn’t even need to show his title plate because the elderly gate-keeper had already respectfully saluted him before concentrating on opening the temple gates.

In accordance to what Nangong Liuyun had said, his face was the best name plate.

He led Su Luo into the hall on the third floor.

The first floor was where commoners were assessed.

The second floor was where military officials were tested.

And those who could enter the third floor were extremely few, for only members of the imperial family were entitled to enter there.

The third floor's lights shone with a mysteriousness feeling. It was rich and luxurious, exquisite and beautiful, with a huge jade table in the center of the wide hall. And atop of the table, was a crystal ball merely the size of a grapefruit.

The crystal ball flickered with sparkling fluorescence. It was clear, translucent, and its brightness was similar to an eye's, as if it was able to reflect the deepest part of a person's heart.

Innate spiritual strength was separated into seven different colors: red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue, and purple. Red was the weakest, and purple was the strongest. Since the beginning of the continent's history, it was so rare to possess purple colored innate talent that you could count them using your fingers and it probably only happened once every several hundred years.

Chapter 016 – The good-for-nothing is actually a super genius!

(2)

And it was from a person's innate spiritual strength, could one see how far he was capable of reaching and how high his potential was in this world that worships the strong.

Which was why the innate talent examination often decided a person's destined fate.

“Put your hand on the crystal ball.” Said Nangong Liuyun to Su Luo.

Su Luo took a deep breath, then determinedly stepped forward, and slowly put her hand onto the crystal ball.

She's already the legendary good-for-nothing with zero innate spiritual strength, so it's not like there would be an even worse outcome, right? If she still didn't have it, there's no reason at all for her to be disappointed.

The crystal ball's radiance was similar to that of translucent spring water, and its radiance even allowed nervous people to calm down.

“Close your eyes and don't think of anything. Just go find the spiritual energy residing inside yourself.” Nangong Liuyun's deep voice was as gentle as the slowly flowing stream of water from a little brook, that gives her a sort of delightful feeling.

Su Luo nodded her head as her expression became calm and peaceful,

she entered into a different kind of unconsciousness.

Behind the crystal ball were seven crystal pillars that were roughly around ten meters tall and as clear as water located in a lake where the bottom can be seen.

At the moment, they were devoid of any colorful pigments but if someone's innate spiritual strength was high enough, these crystal pillars would begin to change color starting from the first.

The colors on the seven crystal pillars were separated into red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue and purple. Only when the first red colored pillar was completely filled would the second orange color begin to show.

At the moment, Su Luo felt her spiritual energy flowing out of her palm like the rushing tides.

The crystal ball began to glow and even became more and more radiant, more and more dazzling, and was so bright that it almost pained one's eyes.

Nangong Liuyun simply stood by Su Luo and his eyes froze for only a moment——

Suddenly——

A blazing red ray of light hit the first crystal pillar.

In less than a second's worth of time, the first crystal pillar whooshed and was already filled with red colored spiritual energy.

The second pillar also whooshed, and was completely filled.

Nangong Liuyun was originally standing in a relaxed position with his arms across his chest while wearing a mysterious smile but now, his posture somewhat faltered as he became stunned at the unceasingly brilliant colored pillars!

Wasn't this speed a bit too fast!?

Based on Nangong Liuyun's former knowledge, even if your innate talent was extremely good, this crystal pillar will still continue to be filled at the speed of a little brook, slow and unhurried. He had never before seen the immediate whooshing he was seeing now that was like a rocket's lift off into space.

Red.....

Orange.....

Yellow.....

Whoosh. Whoosh. Whoosh. In less than a minute, Su Luo had already passed through three crystal pillars. Furthermore, judging by her face that wasn't red from panting for breath, she had not even reached her limit.

Nangong Liuyun stood still and stared at the girl in the midst of the dazzling aurora of brilliant light as his eyes revealed a hint of odd fascination.

Currently, her body was enveloped by a layer of pure brilliance. Her long, jet-black hair glittered with a glossy luster and seemed as if it would break the delicate skin that resembled beautiful porcelain chinaware.

She calmly stood there for a long time, wearing a content smile as she radiated brilliant rays of light like spring morning's dew, refreshing and moving. She was so enchanting that it seem as if she stole a person's soul thus holding their gaze in enthralled

Su Luo was completely unaware of Nangong Liuyun's thoughts, and was also completely unaware of the fact that her innate talent had flabbergasted Nangong Liuyun to such an extreme extent. At this time, she was still unceasingly releasing her spiritual energy.

Green... The green colored crystal pillar had also become completely full.

It was as if the spiritual energy could not be stopped, for it quickly climbed up to the cyan pillar!

Chapter 017 – The good-for-nothing is actually a super genius!

(3)

Effortlessly crossing to cyan....

Although the speed of the transformation started to slow down, there was no indication that it would stop!

Blue.....

Nangong Liuyun's gaze fixated on that crystal pillar, and watched the slowly turning blue spiritual energy.

A thoughtful look flashed across his eyes.

To be capable of illuminating blue spiritual energy already implied exceptional talent and outstanding innate spiritual strength. Because even on this continent, very few were able to reach blue ranked innate spiritual strength.

However..... What left Nangong Liuyun completely speechless was that her spiritual energy acted like a naughty child. It climbed slowly but surely while trying to reach the summit and actually—

Actually lit up that crystal pillar.

The purple colored crystal pillar— In the history of the Eastern Ling

Empire the number of people who lit up that color could be counted on one hand, but this girl Su Luo, actually reached purple colored spiritual energy!

Yet this kind of girl had been treated as a good-for-nothing for the past decade; bullied, abused, and neglected. It was simply a tragic waste of talent!

At this moment, if not for Nangong Liuyun's noble upbringing, even he wouldn't be able to hold back the curse words.

What happened years ago? Why did such a talented girl get labeled as a good-for-nothing? This matter must be thoroughly investigated. A freezing cold expression flashed across Nangong Liuyun's eyes.

Ten minutes, thirty minutes, and one hour later.... The spiritual energy she sent into the crystal ball was like the endless sea. Even after so long, her expression showed no trace of fatigue.

In this world that only respected the strong, talent and innate spiritual strength determined everything... Each of these seven colors represented a person's future levels of success.

Purple was subdivided into high class, middle class and low class.

Overtime, the purple spiritual energy slowly rose pass low class to reach middle class, and finally reaching....

High class!

High class purple!

Nangong Liuyun's normally serene and unflappable face, now carried a dumbfounded expression.

Originally he thought that Su Luo reaching blue colored spiritual energy was not bad, but in the end, she reached purple colored high class. It was too inconceivable and that innate talent was so strong to the point of being frightening.

However.... However, that purple colored spiritual energy was still slowly rising and continuing its freakish climb. Its silent climbing speed wouldn't overtake an ant, but he had never heard of this happening in reality.

It was getting close, getting closer to the summit....

However, at this moment, the situation suddenly changed!

Just when the crystal ball was about to be completely filled, the seven colored crystal pillars suddenly became black, as if they had crashed, and all the colors dissipated.

At this moment, the seven crystal pillars returned to their original transparently clear color, and not a hint of color was left to be seen.

Su Luo suddenly felt a metallic sweet taste in her throat as a stream of

blood burst from the corner of her mouth——

“Luo Luo!” Nangong Liuyun seemed like he teleported in front of Su Luo, his speed was as fast as dispersed smoke. He held Su Luo in his bosom, with an anxious and panicked expression.

“I’m fine.” Su Luo leaned into his embrace and weakly shook her head. “What happened earlier? What exactly was the result of the test? Is it still the same good-for-nothing result?”

After all, she was still concerned about her good-for-nothing innate talent.

A crooked smile perked from the corner of Nangong Liuyun mouth. He playfully tapped her smooth forehead and answered with his low voice. “If you are a good-for-nothing then everyone under the heavens are idiots.”

“So.... I’m not a good-for-nothing?” Su Luo’s mood suddenly became less tense as her electrified gaze looked expectantly toward Nangong Liuyun.

“Cough, cough.” At the moment, Nangong Liuyun didn’t know how to break the news to Su Luo. “Ah, actually, there might be a little problem with this crystal ball....”

Chapter 018 – Talent to become an Apothecarist

“What do you mean?” Su Luo quizzically asked.

Nangong Liuyun also could not tell where the problem surfaced. He gently knocked Su Luo’s forehead. “Don’t worry, nobody can deny that you are definitely a genius among geniuses, but proving this point may be difficult. Since you have already waited these past 10 years, waiting an extra few days should not matter much, am I right?”

“Eh?” Su Luo determinedly stared at him, “Don’t tell me that this unexpected withdrawal is a special case?”

Nangong Liuyun sympathetically gazed at her and solemnly nodded.

Su Luo slumped to the floor while holding her head in anguish. Why was her fate this miserable?

“Let me tell you some good news.” Nangong Liuyun couldn’t bear to see her like this. So he leaned close to her grinning with his unique blend of devilish mysterious charm.

“Speak,” Su Luo replied curtly.

“Your talent really is quite formidable. Did you see the bright rays surrounding you? Do you remember what color it was?”

“Green with a hint of orange?” Su Luo unsurely replied.

Nangong Liuyou gently rubbed Su Luo’s head, his movements were similar to petting a puppy. His mouth held a hint of tenderness that even he didn’t realize: “Silly girl, don’t you know that the green color represents the wood element while orange color denotes the fire element?”

“You’re saying?”

“Correct, you have two elemental attributes and they are wood and fire.” A touch of envy appeared in Nangong Liuyun’s eyes. “A lot of people worship the dual elemental combination of earth and fire.”

“What are you so jealous of?” Su Luo asked, perplexed. She already heard from Lu Luo before that the legendary Prince Jin is a tri-elemental practitioner, then why would he envy her dual elements?

“Girl, you really don’t know how blessed you are.” Nangong Liuyun considerately helped her off the floor and resettled her onto a cushioned lounge to the side. To clear up her confusion he started to explain. “If it were any other elements, even having two is nothing special, but the appearance of both wood and fire elements in the same person, do you know what this means?”

“What?” Su Luo blankly stared him. She really knew next to nothing about this world that respected the powerful.

“When the wood and fire element appear together, it heralds the

emergence of Apothecary talent. Girl, do you know about Apothecaries? Her lost expression look so adorable that he furtively stroked her little pink cheeks.

Su Luo glared at him and indifferently said: “ Please explain.”

Nangong Liuyun laughed heartily: “People with multiple elements are already rare, but the condition of having dual wood and fire elements to become an Apothecarist is even more scarce. Thus, Apothecaries are rare existences in this world with extremely exalted status. Take you as an example, if your father knew about your talent he would utilize everything to support you. Let alone have the courage to bully you, people would even be afraid to criticize you.”

“Apothecaries are that useful?” Su Luo tilted her delicate face and carefully asked.

Of course, ever heard of the Limit Breaking Immortal Pill? With just one pill, one would be able to breakthrough the bottleneck to reach the next level. Now do you still think Apothecaries are useless?” Nangong Liuyun gently rubbed her head.” Now do you understand how awe-inspiring your talent is? Does your heart feel a little better now?

“But...” Su Luo looked at hands, then glanced at the clear transparent crystal ball. Her spiritual strength was way too weird.

“Wait for me for three days.” A rarely seen serious expression appeared on Nangong Liuyun’s face as his ink black eyes burned with brilliance. “I will give you an answer after three days.”

Looks like it is necessary to visit Sinking Sunset Peak. A complex expression flashed across Nangong Liuyun's eyes....

Chapter 019 – My heart had been broken long ago

The recoil from the crystal ball did not seriously injure Su Luo but her head felt muddled and would occasionally twitch from pain. However, she did not mention this matter to Nangong Liuyun.

After returning to the Manor, Su Luo laid on her bed and thought about today's events.

The scheme that made Su Wan fall in the water, which also dragged in Su Xi, made the two sisters fight with one another, and made them suffer tremendously.

As she drifted into thought, a handsome face suddenly popped up in her mind for no reason at all.

An incomparably handsome appearance, extremely high innate talent, extremely strong martial arts, and was even the empire's respected prince. He didn't treat her that badly, and figuratively speaking, Nangong Liuyun wouldn't be that bad of a partner.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth unfolded into a faint and bitter smile.

So what if Nangong Liuyun was serious about her? Her heart had been broken long ago, and was nearly destroyed. How could she fall in love with another once more?

Yun Qi, how are you doing in that world? I had swallowed the Dragon

Ring so you would never be able to find it, heh. Would Sister Ming forgive you?

Without warning, a sparkling teardrop tumbled down her fair delicate face and moistened her cotton pillow.

Yun Qi had given her an unprecedented blow and ruthlessly smashed her faithful devotion into pieces. Su Luo knew that if she fell in love with another in this lifetime and trust another in that way again, that would be a truly difficult feat.

Nighttime. It seemed as if the sky had been wrapped by black armband. As for the time before daybreak, the night sky was at its most darkest of black, as if thick black ink had been spilled on it.

The Su Luo who had sunk into deep sleep did not know the speed of how this day arrived so fast.

Early morning, the first appearance of the red sun unhurriedly climbed upwards in the distant eastern sky. As daylight surfaced, the whole sky was tinged in red hues, evidently prophesizing a clear and bright day. However, many felt that today, was Su Luo's most disastrous day.

After having breakfast, Lu Luo suddenly rushed over in an urgent manner, with tears in her eyes and a face full of panic.

“Miss, how could you still be so calm and relaxed? Something major has occurred!” Due to her rushing here as quick as possible, she gasped for breath.

Su Luo poured a cup of water for her and faintly smiled. “Different situations call for different actions, take your time. Slowly drink this water and then talk.”

How could Lu Luo possibly have time to drink water? She was so anxious that her forehead was littered with beads of sweat. In a panic, she said: “Miss, how could this be a good thing? At dawn, the crown prince personally brought men here and said that he wanted to annul your engagement!”

Oh? So it's like that? And she thought something bad had happened. Su Luo calmly poured water for herself and unhurried drank it as if she was currently sampling the world's most valuable tea.

Seeing her calm and collected expression, Lu Luo became angrier, “Miss! Hurry up and think of a way. You were originally engaged to the crown prince yet was still bullied to that state. If this engagement was annulled, what would the future hold for you...”

Lu Luo still did not know that her former cowardly owner had already been switched with a more stronger soul and was so worried that she was about to start crying.

Su Luo smiled at her and secretly spoke to herself. This marriage thing would sooner or later be annulled. If the crown prince doesn't come in to annul the engagement, she would personally go to annul it later on. The crown prince wanting to annul the engagement fits well with her plan, so why would she go out to prevent it?

At this moment, chaotic footsteps came from outside the door. A middle aged woman came in, looked down at Su Luo with a disgusted glance, and coldly said: “Fourth Miss, Madam requests that you go to the main hall. She wants to discuss an important matter with you.”

This woman was Madam’s most efficient nanny. Known as Nanny Gui, she was at the second step of the Warrior so she was always aloof even in front of Su Luo. Just by facial indications alone, it was as if she was the master and Su Luo was the inferior one.

Chapter 020 – Simply unbelievable

Su Luo coldly smiled, “If I go whenever you tell me to, wouldn’t I lose a lot of face?” In Su Luo’s impression this Madam Su is not benevolent. The original soul that inhabited Su Luo’s body suffered countless losses at the hands of Madam Su and Nanny Gui.

Nanny Gui coldly smiled and scornfully said. “ Fourth miss, you’re joking right?”

“This Miss never jokes.” Su Luo replied seemingly crossed her arms over her chest and seemed serious replied.

Nanny Gui narrowed her eyes and a vicious light flashed across her eyes. “Since Fourth Miss does not appreciate my kindness, then this servant will no longer be polite.”

Although she said she was the servant, there was no trace of respect in her expression and her actions were even more ruthlessly disrespectful. She casually took a few steps forward and appeared by Su Luo’s side. Her strong hands, like those used to catch baby chickens, extended toward Su Luo’s throat.

Su Luo’s eyes contained a frigid light.

Even a servant dare to hit her? Looks like Nanny Gui is impatient to die.

Right at this time of imminent peril, when the burly hands were about to seize Su Luo as Nanny Gui's eyes flashed with victory, the situation suddenly reversed!

“AHHHH—” A miserable scream broke from Nanny Gui's mouth and she looked as if her right arm was in pain as she covered it. The pain was so fierce that cold sweat started dripping off Nanny Gui's face.

Of course Nanny Gui was in extreme pain. Since Su Luo was knowledgeable about human anatomy, when she fought, she directly hit the critical points on Nanny Gui's right arm. Her movements were clean and neat without a hint of sloppyness.

Su Luo crossed her arms across her chest and calmly looked at her with a taunting, cold smile on her face.

“H-how do you know.... this isn't possible!” Nanny Gui looked astonished and was obviously aghast.

“Oh?” Su Luo faintly sneered.

Nanny Gui painfully took a deep breath. She secretly cried to herself; illusion, it must be an illusion. Forth Miss is a good-for-nothing who doesn't know any martial arts. How could she possibly beat me?

Thinking up to here, Nanny Gui released a evil laugh. “Since Fourth Miss refused my polite request unless I force you to, then don't blame this old servant for being impolite!”

Nanny Gui used her other hand, curved into a steel claw, and reached toward Su Luo's neck. She didn't believe that she could not grasp the weak Fourth Miss, who did not know martial arts, with this method.

Suddenly, a black shadow flashed across Nanny Gui's eyes. Su Luo's figure had already disappeared from her line of sight.

However, in that short time, Su Luo aimed her foot at Nanny Gui's butt and kicked.

It was this exact Buddha Mountain Shadowless Kick, that kicked Su Wan into the lotus pond yesterday. This kick was even more powerful now; it directly sent Nanny Gui into the wall three meters away.

Afterwards, a loud violent crash resounded.

The wall had not been repaired for many years now. Thus, it wasn't very solid. The wall shook violently a few times and did not collapse, but some powdered mud broke from the wall and dropped to the ground. At this time, Nanny Gui had already passed out from hitting the wall.

Su Luo's display of power stunned Lu Luo so much that her jaw dropped to the floor.

"M-M-Miss?" Lu Luo was so surprised that she could not speak in complete sentences.

Looking at the Miss who, with one kick, sent Nanny Gui into a dead faint, Lu Luo firmly rubbed her eyes. She still could not believe her eyes.

“Oh.” Su Luo softly sighed. With one hand under her chin, she pondered over how she was going to deal with this old witch.

From Su Luo’s previous memories, she recalled that these past years, Nanny Gui continuously bullied her. Even worse, she deliberately asked the kitchen to send pig feed for her to eat! When she was sick, instead of giving her medicine, she replaced the medicine with urine! The original Su Luo angrily protested but Nanny Gui actually used large needles to poke her!

This kind of old witch, it’s best she dies!

Just based on that hit, she should be out cold for a few days.

Chapter 021 – The long awaited day

At that moment, Su Xi quickly entered into the courtyard from the doorway. Her face brimmed with joy.

She was wearing a wide crimson sleeved flowing fairy top with a loose grass green pleated skirt decorated with misty flowers. Wrapped around her waist was a golden silk belt that blinds the eyes. She was like a freshly blooming lotus; youthfully delicate, lovable and charming.

Everything was beautiful except for one small glaring mistake; there were too many gold and silver jewelries on her body. It seemed as if she was wearing all the beautiful jewelry from the jewelry box; it was flamboyant, vulgar and tacky.

Today was the day Su Xi looked forward to for a long time.

Early in the morning, she was excitedly sitting in the main hall, shifted from left to right, but Su Luo still had not arrived. She finally couldn't wait any longer and personally went looking for Su Luo.

She was just about to ridicule Su Luo, when she saw Nanny Gui laying on the floor, uncertain if she was dead or alive. An alarmed feeling flashed through her heart; her wide eyes glared at Su Luo and angrily said. "Nanny Gui kindly come to invite you, what exactly did you do to her?"

Su Luo innocently spread her hands. "I didn't touch her at all." But I did kick her with my feet.

Su Xi didn't hear the deception in Su Luo's words. She wrinkled her eyebrows in displeasure.

"Then how could she have ended up this way without reason?" Su Xi angrily asked.

In her eyes, her mom's right hand Nanny Gui was obviously more important than this Fourth Elder Sister Su Luo.

Su Luo's innocent face, containing an expression of 'you ask me who am I to ask', gently moved her lips. She thought about it and hesitantly said. "Just when Nanny Gui was walking she accidentally hit the wall. After that, she fainted. It was really weird."

"How is that possible! Fourth sister, when you lie, don't you even write a rough draft?" Su Xi sneered again as her shady eyes stared at Su Luo.

Su Luo helplessly replied: "Who really knows? Even if you don't believe me, there is nothing I can do. But recently a lot of unlucky things happening in the manor is real. This morning, I heard the servants outside saying that a ghost came out of the lotus pond. They say that the ghost, looks ferocious, with a wide bloody mouth...."

Lotus pond being haunted.... These words stabbed at Su Xi's heart. Because if it was really haunted, than that ghost was her, Su Xi.

"Shut up!" As Su Xi thought about yesterday's embarrassment, her face start to color with anger. She quickly change the subject. "Okay, since

Nanny Gui wants to faint, then let her faint. Quickly. Come with me to the main hall to greet the crown prince.”

Su Xi did consider the possibility that Su Luo did the deed, but not even a single trace of battle was in the room. Also Su Luo was a good-for-nothing, how can she possibly be a match for Nanny Gui, who was a second step Warrior? So she directly ruled out the possibility that Su Luo was the attacker.

Since it couldn't be explained clearly, then she'll just ignore it and drop it.

Su Xi allowed no explanation and dragged Su Luo out with her. She was afraid that Su Luo would run away if she let go. If that happened, then the person who would suffer a loss would be her, Su Xi.

Because breaking off this engagement required Su Luo to be physically present; it required her to hear the imperial decree with her own ears to complete the ceremony.

Su Luo coldly turned her head and glanced at Nanny Gui.

She originally worked hard for Su Xi, but in the end, didn't she just get casually discarded? She wondered how Nanny Gui would feel after waking up and finding out about how Su Xi easily abandoning her.

Su Manor Main Hall.

The main hall was extremely large. The floor was covered in red carpet.

There were two rows of eight seats on each side, each was made from the precious Purple Fir Wood and gave off a natural gorgeous, luxurious and expensive air.

The reason why the Purple Fir Wood was expensive, was because it only grew in the Dark Forest, where many magical beasts roamed. Thus, the transportation cost for the wood was prohibitively expensive.

Only similarly powerful and wealth families like the Su Manor could extravagantly afford to make furniture out of the wood.

Chapter 022 – Give you the position of an imperial concubine (1)

At this time, a few people were already sitting in the main hall.

Sitting at the most honored position was none other than the crown prince Su Luo had encountered yesterday — Nangong Liujue.

He seem to like the color yellow. Today he was dressed in a yellow brocade robe, patterned with six golden dragons that ferociously bared their fangs and brandished their claws.

The crown prince was wearing a flat rectangular crown with nine tassels. Each tassel was composed of a golden string threaded through with small silver pearls. The light from the tasseled crown revealed a wild, frivolous and tyrannical face.

His lips were puckered as if sucking on something sour, and his nose was hooked like an eagle's beak. His seemingly calm gaze hid a sharp eagle like deadly edge.

From the beginning, his pair of matchless indifferent eyes never glanced at Su Luo. It was as if just glancing at Su Luo, would dirty his honorable eyes.

Holding a cup of fragrant tea, his posture was elegant and noble. Perfectly composed, he coolly sipped the fragrant tea with a lofty attitude and indifferent demeanor.

Sitting beside him at a lower seating was Great General Su, Su Zian.

This was the first time Su Luo saw the father of her body's original owner.

She only saw a forty year or so person covered in an ink colored robe who had a cold and frigid expression. This person gave off a piercing imposing and detached aura; especially his stern eyes that contained an endless harsh chilliness.

He turned his severe imposing face and shouted at Su Luo. "How can you be so lacking in manners? Why aren't you saluting the crown prince?"

At this time, Su Xi had already sweetly given the proper ceremonial salute to the crown prince. She had already intimately walked to the crown prince's side, affectionately and sweetly saying crown prince brother this and crown prince that.

The crown prince lifted his eyes, a dismissing glance landed on Su Luo's face. He indifferently asked. "You are Su Luo?"

To be honest, the girl standing in front of him didn't look too bad.

Clothed in a white butterfly muslin gown that swept the floor, which showed off her shapely figure; ink black hair tied with a light purple ribbon, and a few strands of escaped hair playfully draped across her shoulder. Her face devoid of cosmetics, was so fresh that it was even moving.

Su Luo softly replied. “ Yes.” Her clear voice was calm and collected, cold and agile, with not a single superfluous word.

She bravely held the crown prince’s gaze with her dark iris that looked like dotted ink.

The crown prince slightly frowned, because Su Luo’s eyes were too pure and too bright. The gaze that was as pure as water, seemed to be like a blinding light that could instantly see through all the secrets hidden in his heart.

The crown prince sulked, silently taking her measure, and tightly wrinkled his forehead. As his hands held the teacup, his mouth hooked up into a nefarious sneer. “Because of you, this king has been ridiculed for more than ten years. Tell me, what sort of punishment do you deserve?”

She never thought that this crown prince would be so unscrupulous and shameless. He was ridiculed by others for more than ten years, but what did that have to do with her? He even threw all the blame onto her.

If it was the past weak and powerless Su Luo, then this matter would have been dropped. But would the current Su Luo suffer such a loss? Obviously not.

Su Luo coldly smiled. “Then may I ask the crown prince, back then was it Su Manor who pushed for this engagement?”

Obviously it was your dear Queen mother who saw Su Manor's Fourth Miss's good omen and hastily decided on the engagement. For fear that Su Luo would be stolen by others. If you want to find a culprit to blame than you should go look for the Queen, why are you looking for me?

This is like picking up soft persimmons and nitpicking it for being soft. Did he really believe that she would not rebel?

“Su Luo!” The color on Su Zian's face begin to change as he violently shouted.

What's wrong with this girl? She didn't have such courage before and every time she saw the crown prince, she would be submissive and could barely breath. Now she even dared to talk back to the crown prince? Who give her this right?

The crown prince's mouth curved into a cold smile as a pair of beautiful piercing eyes held a deep iciness and austerity. “Shrewish sharp mouth, a crafty and skillfully argued speech, and every word spoken is vulgar and rude.”

Chapter 023 – Give you the position of an imperial concubine (2)

Su Luo's laugh was joyful and sunny. "Crown prince is saying that, the crown prince is wise with amazing martial arts, speaks with eloquence, distinguished and carefree, never picks on others, never bully the weak, and never used power to oppress the people? How could this subject even compare?"

The crown prince's brow wrinkled slightly as his eyes filled with annoyance and another bone chilling coldness.

He carelessly played with the thumb ring on his finger, and shot a smile that was not quite a smile at Su Zian, and said. "The Great General really did educate a such great daughter. She really knows how to praise this king, this king really admires that."

Although his words sounded like praise, those words were like a sharp sword that brutally stabbed toward Great General Su's chest.

Su Zian's complexion changed as he waved his hands toward Su Luo and angrily thundered. "Why are you not quickly apologizing to the crown prince?"

Su Luo revealed a terrified expression, and at the same time, looked despondent. She glanced at the raised hand, raised her small palm sized face, innocently asked. "Father, is daughter's praise of the crown prince wrong? Is the crown prince not wise with amazing martial arts? Not eloquent in speech? Not distinguished and carefree? Are you implying that the crown prince picks on others, bully the weak, and oppress the

people?”

Su Zian’s face darkened a little bit after each sentence Su Luo uttered, until the very end when his face could be described as being covered by a dense black cloud.

It could be said that every word Su Luo used, if alone, was correct but put together, it had the opposite meaning. This was Su Luo playing words games. How could Su Zian, a military man, win against her, who was an experienced veteran?

At this time, Su Luo snorted in her heart. Break off the engagement? Even though this lady also wants to break off the engagement, this lady is still in a bad mood because you were the one who mentioned it.

You wanted to break this engagement, but do you think it’ll just break like that because you want it to break?

“Clap.. Clap.. Clap..” The crown prince suddenly stood up, and steadily, step by step, slowly walked to Su Luo’s side. His condescending manner, eyes full of nefarious light, looked at her up and down.

While carrying a evil and callous atmosphere, a touch of interest suddenly flashed in his gaze. Outside of his expectations, Su Luo indifferently stared back at him.

But Su Luo’s heart secretly become more alert. This crown prince was suspicious and capricious; if she mishandled him, then she will suffer a loss.

“Hahaha, amusing. This is really interesting.” The crown prince suddenly started to laugh loudly. He turned toward Su Zian and said. “Great General Su, this king did not speak wrongly. You really did raise an interesting daughter.”

What could Su Zian possibly say? He could only laugh along with the crown prince. In the end, whatever the crown prince says, would always be right.

Su Xi and Su Jingyu’s expression changed in an instant.

What does the crown prince mean? He praised Su Luo as amusing and looked at her with interest. Could it be that this engagement won’t be cancelled?

Although Su Luo’s heart was secretly on guard, she was still confident about her judgement. Regarding the crown prince’s feminine and viscous type of person, he was only interested in what benefit him. He would never give up Su Xi, a piece of fat meat that was about to reach his mouth, on account of Su Luo.

At this moment, Su Jingyu took a step forward. His tone was a bit gloomy as he said. “Your highness, the crown prince——”

The crown prince waved his hands, revealing that faint half smile, and that flirtatious threatening, yet matchless handsome countenance. “This king understand your meaning. Rest assured, today this engagement will be canceled, but——”

He condescendingly said to Su Luo. “ You must really want to marry this king, right? This king is not that unreasonable. I can give you a chance right now.”

Su Luo coldly throw him a glance as she secretly laughed in her heart.

The crown prince nobley sat down on the luxurious soft cushion, and arrogantly continued. “If you can answer the question asked by this king, this king promises you, to give you the position of an imperial concubine.”

Chapter 024 – The crown prince unexpectedly... can't raise it up

If she didn't even care for the position of the crown princess, why should she care for this false position of a non-existent imperial concubine. In her heart, Su Luo secretly laughed at this crown prince's self-righteousness.

She feigned a smile and cast a sidelong glance at the crown prince. "Your highness the crown prince, since the position of an imperial concubine is so precious to you, you can keep it. It can not be awarded to just anyone, and your subject's daughter is afraid that she can't assume the responsibilities."

"What an audacious woman!" Before the crown prince could speak, the imperial bodyguards at the crown prince's side, had already furiously shouted as the tip of their long swords pointed straight at Su Luo's vital point, the throat. As long as the crown prince give the order, the sword point would, without difficulty, pierce her throat.

Su Luo's back was perfectly straight. Her eyes remained cool as she calmly stared at the crown prince, and tauntingly said: "What's wrong? In the presence of so many people, is our wise, good at martial arts, clever and farsighted crown prince trying to intimidate his subject's daughter? Easy to say but not good to hear."

The crown prince was humiliated into anger. He coldly snorted: "Intimidate my subject's daughter? You'd need to be worthy of it first! Since you failed to appreciate my kindness, why should this one give you face?"

That said, the crown prince coldly waved his hand, and issued an order.

Very quickly, a palace eunuch walked forth while holding an imperial edict in his hands, and loudly started to read: “From heaven’s mandate, the Emperor’s imperial order says... The Fourth Miss of Su family behaves improperly... and was not brought up virtuously... Thus, it is impossible for her to assume the position of the crown princess. This thereby invalidates the engagement set years ago. Henceforth, there is no mutual responsibility for them to participate in this wedding, please rise ——”

An imperial decree, was even more difficult to alter.

At this time, it was rare that both Su Luo and Su Xi breathed a sigh of relief at the same time.

The crown prince coldly glared at Su Luo, leaned near her ear, clenched his teeth, and said in a low voice: “Girl, in the future, do not appear in front of this king!”

“What?” Su Luo seems to be shocked and scared silly enough to repeat: “Your highness the crown prince, your reason for breaking off the engagement, it’s because, it won’t... won’t raise up?”

Once the words left Su Luo’s mouth, a deafening silence instantly surrounded the air. Everyone quickly stopped breathing, casted their eyes down, and did not dare to look at the crown prince.

But the corner of her eyes and the tip of her eyebrow, were unable to conceal her smiling expression that clearly explained everything implied within those words.

What a great clever and eloquent loathsome girl!!! The crown prince's face looked as if it had been whipped and was terrifying as dark clouds; it was as if a storm was imminent.

This really was nothing more than Su Luo's scheme to slander. It was the so-called open conspiracy. As the name implied, it was to openly, without tricks, arrange a conspiracy.

If the crown prince was to punish her, it would clearly show that he was trying to cover it up and thus, make it more conspicuous. Was it really because he lacked the confidence and stamina?

But if the crown prince did not punish her, he would lose face.

No matter what the crown prince did, he did not have any ground to stand on. No matter how he answered, he would not be able to clear up this misunderstanding.

It's like yellow mud dropping from inside his pants from the crotch area. Even if it was not poop, it was still considered to be poop.

The crown prince's face went from blue to red. He fiercely stared down at Su Luo, until finally, he harshly flinged his sleeves and strided away.

Su Jingyu admonished Su Luo with displeasure: "Terrible girl, how

could you speak like that? How can you speak to the crown prince like that? The crown prince did not punish you because of him being merciful, you should reflect on it!’

After he finished speaking, Su Jingyu pacified Su Xi with a glance, then quickly followed the departing crown prince.

As for what exactly he was trying to pacify, perhaps only he knew.

“How... How could you...” Su Zian unwaveringly glared at Su Luo. He stared at her like he wanted to swallow her whole, “How could you be this shameless!”

Su Luo sneered in her heart. On the surface, her lips were flat, as if she had been wronged, “But... But honorable father, the crown prince he, he really said that...”

When the crown prince leaned close to her ear and said something earlier, only the two of them knew what had been said. If the crown prince wanted to deny it, hahaha, there’s no chance of that now!

Chapter 025 – Stop indulging in your wild fantasies!

Su Zian grinded his teeth. He wanted to be angry, yet he had no grounds to be angry. In this situation, on the surface, it seemed as if Su Luo did nothing wrong. She only repeated the words after being scared.... But unfortunately, why did the person have to be the crown prince?

Su Zian could only mercilessly lecture her. “How did your mother educate you everyday? Don’t you know even a little propriety? You can’t even restrain any of your words. It serves you right that the crown prince canceled the engagement.

Su Luo’s coldly smiled in her heart.

You can’t even restrain any of your words? Doesn’t that mean he also thought that the crown prince... Pfft, Su Luo felt that it was hilariously funny. Presumably, this rumor regarding the crown prince would quickly spread everywhere.

However, this father’s heart was truly bias, huh.

He already knew that an engagement with Su Xi would be set up soon after the crown prince broke his engagement with her. What was the point of deliberately putting on an air of the dignified patriarch now? Was he really taking her for a fool?

Pretending to have been wronged, Su Luo looked at Su Zian. “Father, is it because I don’t know propriety that the crown prince doesn’t want me? If I learned propriety then the crown prince will want me?”

Su Zian's expression suddenly become tense.

The reason why the crown prince wanted to cancel the engagement was not only because of this, the other reason was easy to say, but it did not sound good...

Su Zian's aged face hardened. He heavily flung his sleeves as his expression became angry due to shame. "If you worked harder, how could you have ended up in this position? Who can you blame?"

What was wrong with this daughter today? The words she said were as cowardly as usual, but these words could actually make him choke.

"What if my innate spiritual talent now reaches the purple rank? Will father value me then? And would the crown prince still break off the engagement?" Su Luo's face had a naive romantic expression. Those vivid eyes seemed to be full of expectations and yearning.

"Purple rank?" It was as if Su Zian had heard the world's biggest joke. He bursted into loud laughter.

After a long time, he mockingly scoffed at Su Luo. "Do you even know what having purple ranked innate talent means? Not to mention purple rank, just a blue rank, no, even cyan. If you really have cyan talent then I, your father will personally kneel down before you and pour water for your tea!"

Speaking of Su Luo's spiritual talent, it was the most humiliating topic

for Su Zian.

At that time, because of this good-for-nothing Su Luo, he was mocked by his colleagues for half a year. This matter became his nightmare; even now, when this affair gets mentioned, he couldn't help but feel deep hatred.

Su Luo raised her palm sized small face that looked lovely and pitiful, and weakly asked. "But father, if I accidentally become a wood and fire dual elemental, and also incidentally become an Apothecary, would you treat me very well?"

"Wood and fire dual element?" Su Zian stared at Su Luo as if observing an idiot. He did not have the heart to laugh at this stupid daughter of his.

But she was still quite pitiful to be born a natural good-for-nothing.

He could only reply, "Wood and fire dual element? Luo Luo, ah. You really want to become so strong that you became crazy just from thinking about it, right? Do you even know how rare it is for a wood and fire dual element to appear? The reason why our Su family can achieve such a position we have now, could be because of your grandfather's Sea Stabilizing Divine Needle, but the most important reason, was because our Su family had a wood and fire dual element Apothecary. Do you understand? Also, about becoming an Apothecary, stop indulging in your wild fantasies!"

Although the Apothecary in the Su family was still only an Intermediate Apothecary, he was still someone that various powerful

families were trying, with utmost effort, to win over. The reason why the royal family wanted to woo the Su family was mostly because of the Su family's Apothecary.

This Apothecary was none other than Su Zian's biological older brother.

He was infatuated with refining medicine all year round, and worked hard for a few decades, only to finally ascend to become an intermediate Apothecary.

Chapter 026 – I really must thank you!

Indulging in wild fantasies? Su Luo's vision fell upon the center of her fair hands. The results of the assessment told her that the talent within these hands were no less inferior than anyone else's. Not only that, it was actually the talent of a genius among geniuses, a kind that rarely appears once every few hundred years.

Even though.... a slight problem had appeared at the moment. But she would definitely find the reason.

Her innate talent must not be left buried. She wanted to stand on top of the world and let those people who trampled over her regret raising their head to look down at her.

Seeing the dazed Su Luo, another fit of anger emerged inside Su Zian's heart.

This disappointment of a daughter, I seriously suffocate from anger every time I look at her.

“There is nothing more for you here, leave quickly.” This father impatiently waved his hands, like he was chasing off a beggar, and dismissed Su Luo.

“Oh.” Su Luo walked a few steps, then stopped to turn around and stare deeply at her father. Suddenly, a smile manifested on her face, a smile like the sweet and alluring Queen of the Night that was dazzling to the eye. “Honorable father, today you told me to leave, but you must not

regret it afterwards.”

“Humph. Father indeed has regrets; Father’s deepest regret was that he allowed you, a shameful good-for-nothing, to be born back then.” Su Zian did not speak and it was actually Su Xi who answered. She taunted her by sneering with her lips as she arrogantly raised her chin.

Su Xi sneered with a towering arrogance as she observed Su Luo. Her arrogant expression looked as if she had been observing a little ant. “Su Luo, it is important to know one’s own limits. Since you are the lowest of all losers, then scam and go back to your lowly livelihood that’s no different than a dog’s. Hurry up and scam! Just seeing you makes me angry!”

Without the crown prince present, Su Xi’s gentle ladylike manners completely disappeared as she exposed her spoiled and unreasonable true nature.

Even though Su Xi hurled abusive words at Su Luo and said that she was a dog, Su Zian did not refute a single word. This was sufficient to illustrate where Su Luo’s existence in this family placed in his heart.

Su Luo did not bother to trade insults with Su Xi. She only took a deep glance at Su Zian. The deep meaning in her eyes fixed onto Su Zian until his heart grew nervous.

Just when Su Zian was about to speak, Su Luo immediately turned around without hesitation. With big strides, she left this coldly indifferent and suffocating place.

While walking, she secretly laughed grimly in her heart. Su Zian, since you chose this today, don't even think about borrowing my, Su Luo's light in the future.

Su Zian was completely unaware of what he had lost after his previous cold apathy towards Su Luo.

If he knew that he would be losing a purple ranked innate spiritual strength genius of a daughter, a wood and fire dual elemental Apothecary, perhaps he would regret it until his intestines became greenish black.

Sadly, the world did not have medicine for regret. He used cold detachment and neglect to make this bitter fruit and he could only personally swallow it himself.

In the company of Lu Luo, Su Luo slowly walked out of the Main Hall.

At this time, the sun outside was at its strongest, glaring and dazzling to the eye.

Su Luo's face carried a bland smile. The engagement had finally been cancelled. She could also finally release a breath of relief. As for the crown prince's hatred toward her... Presumably, the crown prince would be very busy, so he should not have time to look for her.

Suddenly, Lu Luo's eyes lit up as she pointed at the side of an underbrush where a dazzling jade pendant laid. "Miss, there's a purple fish jade pendant over there."

Lu Luo picked it up and handed it to Su Luo.

Su Luo looked at the purple fish jade pendent and felt that it was somewhat familiar. Suddenly, an epiphany flashed within her mind as a sly and narrow smile slowly appeared. Her eyes shined with starlight, and the corner of her mouth also curled into a mysterious smile.

“Miss?” Lu Luo did not understand. While staring at the purple fish jade pendent, why was her Mistress smiling so treacherously?

“Good Lu Luo, I really must thank you!” Su Luo gave her enormous praise.

Chapter 027 – Three days flashed by in an instant

Three days flashed by in an instant.

Tonight was the appointed day Nangong Liuyun had promised to meet her.

The night was as black as ink. A few remaining stars hung in the desolate sky as they produced a weak radiance.

Suddenly, a black shadow appeared through the night sky and approached like the wind. His robe elegantly fluttered, like a beautiful fallen immortal.

In a short time, this human shadow quietly landed in the remotest courtyard of the Su Manor.

“Come in.” Very quickly, an unsurprised clear and cold voice came from the room.

When Nangong Liuyun entered, he saw Su Luo with a book in hand. She was earnestly reading in the candlelight.

Today she wore a white muslin gown; it was simple and plain. It seemed as if she was pure and impervious, but also outstandingly sharp.

The hazy candlelight shrouded her body, as if it was covered in a faint

layer of radiant mist. She looked blurred, cold and pure as well as noble and faint.

Due to her killer instinct, even before the door was pushed open by Nangong Liuyun, Su Luo had already detected his presence.

While Nangong Liuyun, step by step, walked toward her back, it seemed as if Su Luo's had eyes behind her back. She calmly put down the book in her hand and gestured. "Sit."

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth curled into a devilish enchanting smile. If he sat after being told to sit, wouldn't he be losing face?

Thus, Nangong Liuyun refused to sit down on the perfectly good chair. Instead, he chose to sit on the tiny space by Su Luo's side, and closely squeeze in next to her.

"Nangong Liuyun, behave. Don't get fresh with me." Su Luo's shapely eyebrows wrinkled slightly. She did not like to be in physical contact with people, so she wanted to push him away.

But her hand was stopped in mid-air, because Nangong Liuyun was already using his large hands to wrap it around hers.

Men and women were born with a disparity in their physical strength.

Su Luo peevishly glared at him, but his face beamed with a cheeky grin.

“Don’t be so stingy, I’m really worn out.” Nangong Liuyun’s slender and smooth finger hooked onto Su Luo’s bright and clean tapered chin. The corner of his mouth was set into a roguish and enchanting smile as he spoke in a deep and husky voice. “For you, this king could be said to have rushed past a thousand li, or even travelled ten thousand li, and this is how you compensate this king?”

(TL: li = Chinese mile = .5 kilometers)

Three days ago during the test at the Spirit Testing Temple. Su Luo’s body had been covered in a mysterious, and freakishly abnormal spirit force.

At that time, Nangong Liuyun left after escorting Su Luo home. He only left behind a few words, that after three days, he would come back and give her an explanation.

Su Luo knew this matter would be difficult, so she already remembered this favor in her heart. She would definitely return this favor in her own way.

With him lifting up her chin, Su Luo’s vision coincidentally landed on his face.

Suddenly, she stared at him blankly.

His description of rushing past a thousand li, and traveling a distance even further that could possibly reach ten thousand li, did not seem to be an exaggeration.

The Nangong Liuyun from three days ago was full of god like charm, was vibrantly handsome, pretty with extraordinary beauty, leisurely amorous, with incomparable grace.

Though the him now still was as pretty as before, and was still extraordinarily handsome, he looked completely travel worn and grimness coated his face. Looking carefully, his lower eyelids had a hint of a blue-green color, and traces of exhaustion could be seen all over his face.

Even when exhausted, the depths of his eyes still rippled with devilish charm and an enchantingly light smile. His obsidian-like eyes glistening with light, and every leisure gesture exuded the highest quality of a king's domineering air. What was also difficult to hide, was his extremely refined elegance and charisma.

Su Luo's heart was slightly moved.

To say that her heart was completely unmoved at this time, would obviously be impossible. After all, she was not made out of wood and completely lacked emotion. But to say that it was love would truly be out of the question.

In fact, Su Luo had yet to realize how difficult and dangerous this thousand li trip Nangong Liuyun made to Sinking Sunset Peak truly was. It was simply beyond what the current her could imagine.

But Nangong Liuyun still continued to roguishly and enchantingly smile. Not a hint of these hardships could be seen on his face, to the

point where Su Luo could not even guess at the real difficulty of this trip.

Chapter 028 – At this moment, time seemed to have stopped

Su Luo looked at him and raised her eyebrow: “Then thank you for your hard work, but I hope you did not labor in vain.”

While smiling, Nangong Liuyun tapped her lovable and charming upright nose. “Girl, you’re really heartless. This king personally lifted his foot to fish around for information but your expression is still neither cold nor hot. How can this be allowed? Come, give this king a kiss first.”

While Nangong Liuyu was speaking he already took the opportunity to lean into her.

Not waiting for the touch of his soft lips, Su Luo immediately pushed him away: “Nangong Liuyun. You are the dignified, stately Prince Jin, the rumored legendary outstandingly talented genius. How can you be so shamefully? Aren’t you afraid of being made fun of if this were to be leaked out?”

“Silly girl, this king only treats you like this, so how could other people know?” Nangong Liuyun happily laughed while pinching Su Luo’s pink cheeks.

This girl’s fuming expression was so adorable and so lovable, that he had to pinch her again.

Su Luo glared at him unhappily. “Sit properly, stop trying to touch me.”

But Nangong Liuyun had been running around for three days, so he didn't have a chance to get intimately close to her then, how could he so easily let go of such an opportunity? The corner of his mouth hooked into a nefarious smile as his enticingly enchanting deep and beautiful eyes captivantly stared at Su Luo.

This demon!

Su Luo's face had a speechless expression. Suddenly, the corner of her eyes bent slightly as it flashed with cynicism. "Nangong Liuyun, is it because you didn't find an explanation that you are purposefully trying to distract me?"

Gloating him was really useful.

"Really, clever girls are no fun." Nangong Liuyun sighed. Although he did not win an inch while wanting a mile, he also did not plan on releasing Su Luo. He suddenly became serious, looked at Su Luo cautiously, and slowly stressed each word. "Girl, tell me, recently, do you often get dizzy spells?"

Su Luo saw a never before seen serious expression on his face and her heart faintly trembled with fear. What's going on? The formerly harmonious smiling expression had now become this deadpan. She was still not used to such an abrupt shift .

Su Luo thought about it, nodded her head, and answered: "Indeed, sometimes I get headaches."

Not only that, she would also get very dizzy and sleepy to the point that she really wanted to go sleep... and after falling asleep, it was hard to wake her up.

Su Luo suddenly had a feeling that it was as if she might have a serious illness.

“Does your dantian feel bloated? Does it feel hard when you touch it?” Nangong Liuyun hastily followed up with another question.
(TL: Dantian – a point below the navel where one’s qi/energy pools at.)

But he had a strange and complicated expression on his face. Su Luo had never seen this earnest and serious concentration on his face. This serious expression also seem to hold a touch of hope in it.

His large hands that were holding Su Luo suddenly tightened. It was sufficient to prove that he was anxious in his heart.

Something that could make the legendary Prince Jin anxious to this extent should not be a trivial matter. Then, what exactly is happening to her body?

Su Luo’s heart felt as if it was being pressed down upon by heavy boulders. Suddenly, it felt somewhat suffocating.

But then, she thought about it again.

How much worse could it get? She was already a good-for-nothing. At worst, she just won’t be able to practice martial arts in the future.

Su Luo slowly exhaled her muddy feelings. She calmly looked at him, casually said. “Yes, sometimes I feel bloated, what does that mean?”

Previously, she just assumed that her menstrual cycle was about to begin so she did not pay it too much thought. After all, this body was about 15 years old, getting her period was normal.

But now, it seemed to be clear that they were not related.

Momentarily, their surroundings became really quiet, quiet to the degree that a falling leaf could be heard.

At this moment, time seemed to have stopped.

Even the surrounding air seemed to contain an apprehensive stiffness.

Chapter 029 – This king is wholeheartedly willing

Nangong Liuyun's pair of penetrating eyes purposefully watched Su Luo and did not speak for a long time.

He opened his mouth, then closed it. Only after quite some time did he slowly ask another question. "Have you seen a ring before, a ring with an engraved dragon on it?"

"Dragon Ring?" Su Luo abruptly cried out in surprise.

Of course she had seen the Dragon Ring, how could she forget the Dragon Ring?

In her previous life, the Dragon Ring was her last assignment. And it was also because of this Dragon Ring that she could ruthlessly thwart Yun Qi one last time.

Back then, when she had been shaking the brocade box in front of Yun Qi, the box actually contained wedding rings. She had personally bought them with the intention of marrying Yun Qi.

But unfortunately, Yun Qi had mistaken it for the Dragon Ring, and carelessly fell into her trap.

At the last moment, before death, Su Luo swallowed the Dragon Ring, and immediately jumped off the cliff. Underneath the cliff, were the turbulent ocean waves.

Even if she died, she would never give Yun Qi the opportunity to obtain the Dragon Ring.

But why did Nangong Liuyun know about the existence of the Dragon Ring, enough to even ask about it?

Back then, a wealthy guest had spend three billion US dollars to set up an assignment to look for this ring. What is so wonderful about this ring?

Was her spirit traveling through space and time related to the Dragon Ring?

All of a sudden, Su Luo became somewhat perplexed.

“You know about the Dragon Ring?” A complicated emotion flashed within Nangong Liuyun’s pupils. His gaze closely watched Su Luo seemly afraid to miss any trace of emotion on her face.

“Indeed, I have seen it before, so what?” Su Luo’s expression had become cautious when she callously replied.

But now, if asked to take out the Dragon Ring, it would be impossible.

And even if they dissected her body, they still may not find the Dragon Ring. After all, the body that swallowed the Dragon Ring was not this current body.

“You have swallowed it before, right?” Nangong Liuyun’s expression had a touch of excitement.

She never thought that with one phrase, Nangong Liuyun would be able to go straight to the crucial point.

But why is he so excited?

Su Luo warily looked at him. The corner of her mouth upturned into a smile, her hands linked into her arms, as her pair of liquid eyes held a frosty expression.

She could only uneasily smile while observing him, and did not saying a word.

“Don’t be so nervous, how could I harm you?” Nangong Liuyun playfully squeezed her cheeks.

This girl’s cheek is pink and tender; with skin that glistened like amber, snowy white with spot of pink, it seem as if water can be squeezed out. It really feel good in my hand.

Seeing Su Luo’s frown, his pair of phoenix eyes brimmed with devilish allure and a charming smile. “Silly girl, what kind of wild things are you imagining? The Dragon Ring has spiritual protection. If it is swallowed by the host and the host did not die from immediate bodily explosion, this means that the Dragon Ring has already recognize this host as its master. Even if others dissected this master, they still would not get the Dragon Ring because the master and the Dragon Ring would have

already merged together.”

Observing the pleasantly smiling Nangong Liuyun, Su Luo spread out her hands. “Sorry, but being cautious and prudent is part of my nature, it may be hard to change that.”

“Being cautious and prudent is appropriate and would never need to be changed. Moreover, this king likes your ice-cold indifference that could repel a person a thousand li away.” Nangong Liuyun overindulgently tapped her lovable and charming nose.

“Are you deliberately looking to be abused?” Su Luo seemed puzzled. He doesn’t want the ones delivered to his doorstep and rather pester her?

“It’s because you did not realize how captivating you are to people, silly girl.” Nangong Liuyun’s deep black cold pupils exuded a faint luster. He took hold of Su Luo’s hand while laughing devilishly and languishly with charm. “If you are the one abusing, then this king is wholeheartedly willing.”

Chapter 030 – The Dragon Ring’s approval

“Don’t change the subject.” Su Luo realized that her own thoughts had been steered far from the main topic. She quickly returned to the main topic, and continue to question him. “How do you know about the Dragon Ring situation? Also, what’s happening in my body actually has something to do with the Dragon Ring?”

“It’s related, it’s strongly related.” Nangong Liuyun’s gentle voice was also tinted with a hint of roguish charm. He indulgently reclined on the chair and stared at Su Luo like an idling Lord. “So thirsty.”

This was clearly getting to the crucial point, and then putting on an air.

Su Luo could not stand this guy’s behaviour and snorted. But her face was overflowing with a smile that become increasing more brilliant. She cheerfully poured boiling water into a decrepit porcelain teacup. “I don’t have tea leaves, only boiled water, please make do and drink it.”

“Let whom drink water?” Nangong Liuyun crossed his legs while smiling coarsely and charmingly.

This stupid arrogant show off was really hard to wait upon.

Su Luo cursed him in her heart, but her smile became even more dazzling. “Your highness Prince Jin, please drink some water.”

Who would have expected that Nangong Liuyun would be so petty to

even bother. He arrogantly waved his hands and childishly tilted his head away while carrying a tone of dislike. “Not intimate enough.”

This guy...!

Su Luo grinded her teeth. Her smile became even more dazzling as she stressing each syllable. “Nangong Liuyun, will you drink now?”

“Liuyun or Yun.” Nangong Liuyun lazily threw out a suggestion.

Su Luo’s hand fold into fists, and dropped the teacup on the table with a “thump”. She crossed her hands over her chest and languidly shoot him a glance. “Finish playing yet?” Does he really think that he wass her lord?

Seeing that Su Luo was no longer cooperating, Nangong Liuyun unexpectedly moved closer with impatience and happily smiled as he hugged her. “This Luo Luo girl is really stingy. Not even a bit of fun.”

“Then go find some girl who’s fun.” Su Luo ignored him, and then turned her head away.

“How could that be possible? This king will only pester you.” Nangong Liuyun’s entire face smiled foolishly with a shameless “I won’t retaliate when hit and won’t retort back when cursed” look on his face.

Him acting this way, made it impossible for Su Luo to get mad.

She instantly glanced back and fixedly stared at Nangong Liuyun.

Was this really that rumored legendary callous, devilishly charming, powerful, and despotic Prince Jin?

Was this really that Nangong Liuyun who could effortlessly annihilate anything?

Was this also the second prince of Eastern Ling who had developed an advanced stage of mysophobia where a stranger could not get close? Where a light punishment would be a chopped hand, and a heavy punishment where they would become mincemeat?

This alluring and devilish charming, lazy and lecherous, all smiles, sloppy appearance, was truly truly, that aloof and remote super talented person?

This was not logical!

Has this guy's soul also been switched? Su Luo speculated and was unable to stop herself from staring at him.

Due to Su Luo's unblinking gaze, Nangong Liuyun's heart become apprehensive. He shivered a little and weakly asked: "What do you want to do?"

"I want to dissect you and have a look to see if your soul has been switched." Su Luo sullenly replied.

“Eh?”

“What are you ehing about? Can you start explaining it now? What exactly is the relationship between the Dragon Ring and what happened to my body? You are not allowed to keep me in suspense.” Su Luo, who was always being lead by his pace of changing the subject, looked completely at a loss.

Nangong Liuyun also felt that he teased her enough for today. If he continued teasing this girl, this girl would definitely go ballistic.

He moved to Su Luo’s side and stared at her with eyes that contained a hint of envy. “In fact, speaking of this matter it is really complicated. There really are stupid people with stupid luck.”

If comparing luck, under the heavens who could say that their luck was better than Su Luo’s?

Looking at Su Luo’s expectant gaze, Nangong Liuyun mysteriously smiled. “Girl, do you even know what the approval of the Dragon Ring means?”

Chapter 031 – An ordinary man is innocent, but having a cherished item would get him into trouble

“What does it mean?” As Su Luo raised her palm sized small face and beautiful eyes that seemed to be filled with sparkling water, it looked very adorable.

In fact, she still had not fully grasped an understanding of this world where only the mighty were respected. She had simply gleaned some knowledge from asking Lu Luo in the past few days.

Nangong Liuyun’s pair of dark translucent eyes glistened. His lips were dark red and moist. Moreover, its devilish charm and soft attractiveness was as red as the bloody red color of the Japanese rose. He carefully restrained her shoulders and stressed each word. “It means that you, Su Luo, in addition to the dual elements of wood and fire, you also possess the space element, now do you understand?”

Nangong Liuyun had a face that was practically full of defeat. He had truly been defeated by Su Luo’s luck.

Space element huh. How rare was it in this continent? It could be described as extinct.

“Space element mage?” Su Luo was somewhat confused. She looked like a curious doll as she earnestly asked. “In this world, wasn’t there only five major elements: wood, fire, wind, water, and lightning? How could there be an additional space element?”

“That’s because, space mages had already disappeared from the continent a few hundred years ago. So later on everybody would just omitted the space element. Thus, what was originally the six major elements became the five major elements.”

Nangong Liuyun was speechless, how could a person’s luck be so good to such an extent?

Innate spiritual talent at the high class purple rank.

Elemental mage of dual attributes.

With the great luck of them being the wood and fire dual elements. Now she could proudly practice to be an Apothecary.

Moreover, she also was a long-lost mage of the space element!

Ah, space element.... just thinking about it would definitely make one drool.

Although there were spatial rings still being passed down in this continent, the spatial ring, a storage device, simply could not be compared to a space mage’s own space. They were two completely different concepts.

Spatial ring was only a device for storage, but if one were to talk about a spage mage, his space is contained within his body. It would be comparable to making their own world. Additionally, this small world would gradually grow larger along with its owner’s cultivation. In the

end, nobody could tell to what extent it could become.

Another point was that in this world, only space mages were about to produce spatial rings.

Since space mages disappeared from the continent, the spatial rings were currently exceptionally expensive.

Take Eastern Ling Empire for example. In the entire Eastern Ling Empire, only his majesty the Emperor had a spatial ring that only had a small area for storage.

This was the so-called an ordinary man is innocent, but having a cherished item would get him into trouble.

If people were informed that this girl was actually a space mage, in all probability, the continent's numerous powerful forces would act at once upon hearing this news, and vie to be the first to snatch her.

And it was not only the well known and influential forces, there were some hidden aristocratic families who would not be able to resist the temptation of monopolizing her.

After all, if they had a space mage, then it would mean the birth of new spatial rings. Although this is a matter further in the future, the thing these aristocratic families do not lack are time and patience.

Su Luo literally has a mountain of treasure at her disposal but was currently powerless to defend it. Fortunately, the only people who are

currently aware of this matter were the two of them.

Nangong Liuyun solemnly said to Su Luo. “Girl, this Dragon Ring matter, you absolutely can not let anyone know. Otherwise, even this king would not be able to protect you.”

Su Luo was an assassin in her previous life, so it was natural for her to know about the complexity of human nature and their greed. She nodded her head and seriously replied. “I will naturally not speak about it. But what is the relationship between the Dragon Ring and my problem with my wood and fire dual elemental power?”

“The relationship between them is complicated. Simply put, your space element is excessively potent, thus it suppressed your dual elements. So right now, there is no way for you to cultivate. Once your space appears, this ought to be resolved.”

Chapter 032 – What a sharp girl

“What are the conditions that will make my stupid space appear?” Su Luo was extremely confused and anxious.

If it does not appear in this lifetime, then doesn't it mean that she couldn't cultivate for her entire lifetime?

It looks like disaster and good luck would always go hand in hand. It is impossible for one to repeatedly get good things.

Nangong Liuyun laughed crookedly. This laugh had a crafty and sinister quality in it. “To say that this matter is difficult is not difficult. To say it's easy, is not that easy.”

“Stop keeping me in suspense.” Su Luo lazily raised her eyebrow.

“To open your space, you must have three things. One, Spatial Grass. Two, Celestial Spirit Water. And three, the blood of a dragon.. If you collect all three items, then you can open your space.” Nangong Liuyun's deep gaze started to give off a demonic gleam that was dazzlingly beautiful and devilishly charming.

Su Luo's fine eyebrows tightened. “What are these three items? Where can they be found?”

Where could she, the unfavored daughter of a mistress, find a spatial whatever grass and the blood of a dragon?

“I have already brought the spatial grass. As for the dragon’s blood, there are Armored Back Dragons in the Sunset Mountain Range. We’ll find some time to go slay a dragon. As for this Celestial Spirit Water...” Nangong Liuyun paused a little as a nefarious and charming smile appeared, enticingly stared at her with a hidden meaning. “It is in fact as far away as the end of the earth, yet is also right in front of your eyes.”

“Oh? Could it be in Su Manor?” Su Luo’s curly, thick silky black eyelashes fluttered like butterfly wings. She looked as beautiful and naughty as a fine porcelain doll.

She did not even have half a favorable impression of the Su Manor. If really was here, then it would just be simple and convenient.

Nangong Liuyun’s smile seemed to be able to charm all living things; it was enchanting and wild. He looked confident and at ease as he waved a fan. “What a smart girl. You hit the mark with one guess. The Celestial Spirit Water just happens to be inside your Su Manor, and it’s also Su Manor most heavily guarded treasure.”

“If it’s actually here, what are we waiting for? There’s no time to lose.” Su Luo’s clear eyes lightly smiled again.

Since it’s Su Manor’s precious treasure, then she won’t be impolite and kindly accept it.

“You’re going to find your honored father to ask for it?” Nangong Liuyun’s beautiful pair of eyes harbored a sinister charm.

A breeze gently brushed away Su Luo's beautiful jet black hair, making her seemed almost gentle, beautiful and sweet tempered. But the expression in her eyes was as incomparably apathetic as before. The words she said matched her expression. "Ask for it? How could I asked for it? I'm obviously going to steal it."

"That's actually not necessary. You can just tell your honorable father that you have wood and fire as dual elements and is a future space mage. Once he knows that, he'll be happy for you. Then wouldn't the Celestial Spirit Water would be handed to you?"

"Are you seriously stupid or are you pretending to be stupid?" Su Luo hit him without reservation. "I don't know if you're actually stupid but I'm certainly not stupid. My family's honorable father is cold, detached, unkind, and selfish without regard for others. Forget about whether or not he would actually believe my words, so what if he believed them? In his heart I'm only a tool to be exchanged at for his benefit. As long as someone is wealthy enough to give an offer that can tempt him, he would not hesitate to sell me. Also, Nangong Liuyun, don't use this method to incite me. It's meaningless."

"What a sharp girl." Suddenly, Nangong Liuyun's gentle laugh appeared. The sound was kind, indolent, and extremely pleasant to hear. While laughing, he used his fan to gently tap Su Luo's bright forehead.

As expected, this girl did not disappoint him.

If it was a normal girl who had been bullied for more than ten years, who woke up one morning to find out that her innate talent was actually

extraordinary and peerless under the heavens, the first thing she would do was announce it to the whole world.

But Su Luo, she was the same,

Yet with her kind of unwavering determination and patient nature, he was certain that she would walk very very far in the distant future...

Chapter 033 – As expected, she was clever enough

“What a stupid prince.” Su Luo rudely riposted with blazing spirit and eyes as bright as stars.

Prince Jin in other people’s eyes is insufferable arrogant , was merely a paper tiger in front of her. When facing him, she never knew what one would call mercy. Who told him to be such a scoundrel?

“Since you understand, then this king’s heart is at ease.” Nangong Liuyun patted her head, with his eyes containing a simile not yet a smile sort of meaning.

He really was worried that this girl momentarily could not contain her excitement and speak about this matter to Su Zian.

After all, he was very clear about what kind of person Su Zian was.

Fortunately, even though this Su girl had been bullied for so many years, she was not timid, nor did she have an inferior complex. Instead of being spoiled or disgraced, shocked or perturbed, she was calm. It even seemed like if Mt. Tai were to collapse, her expression would remain the same.

This kind of temperament should not have appear in a fifteen year old girl, but she was able to do it.

She was indeed worthy of being the girl that he, Nangong Liuyun

fancied. As expected, she was clever enough.

Nangong Liuyun nodded his head, with a comforting expression.

“There is no need to delay. Since I have already decided to steal the Celestial Spirit Water, then another day may not be as good as today, is today good enough?” Su Luo said with a calm and elegant expression. Her white muslin robes danced gracefully, making her look like a quietly elegant beautiful celestial being, as her fair skin shined with the luster of ice and gems.

She tilted her small palm sized face and fixed her gaze on Nangong Liuyun. With her beautiful eyes that had the expression of tempest tossed water, lips that seemed to contain red powder, she was indescribably alluring.

Facing such a charming and captivating small face, Nangong Liuyun discovered that he could not utter a word of refusal to participate in her scheme. He closed his fan and tapped it on the table. “Okay, whatever you say goes.”

In his eyes, Su Manor was not an impenetrable fortress. The most powerful existence in Su Manor was the guardian of the Hidden Treasure Pavilion who was merely a sixth step expert.

And he, was currently also at the sixth step. They should be equally matched, and neither should overpower the other.

Consequently, the two discussed the appropriate strategies and started

their preparations.

They put on pitch-black clothing appropriate for the night and stuffed their hair into a black scarf. Even their faces were covered with a layer of black cloth.

Their bodies were entirely shrouded in black, for only a pair of fresh, quick-witted and tempest tossed eyes were exposed.

Just when they were about to leave, the corner of Su Luo's mouth hooked into a shallow smile, as a crafty and sinister expression glowed from her eyes.

She retrieved the purple fish jade pendant from under her pillow, and raised her slender eyebrows with a particular excitement. After that, she stuffed the jade pendant close to her bosom, and then turned to blink at Nangong Liuyun. "Let's go."

This jade pendant actually belonged to Su Jingyu. If it was accidentally left in the Hidden Treasure Pavilion... Ouch! Just thinking about it would make one's blood boil wildly; with 10,000% excitement!

Even if she didn't get anything from this trip, with just this jade pendant, she would earn back her initial investment.

She just happened to want to anger her selfish and greedy father to death. Who told him to be so cold, detached and heartless?

She just happened to use this to frame Su Jingyu. Who told him to

bully and frame her?

Since he started it first, then don't blame her for finishing it.

Nangong Liuyun saw Su Luo's eyes jump with excitement and a smile flashed from the depth of his eyes.

Even though at this time, he could not guess at what this girl was thinking of doing, he still knew that this girl liked to toy with people she had a grudge on. It was unknown who would be out of luck this time.

It looks like, if he wanted to chase this girl into his hands, then he would have to expend a lot of effort.

Sure enough, really smart and clever girls were hard to fool. Nangong Liuyun was itching to beat his chest and stomp his feet.

No matter what, this girl would eventually be sleeping in his bed in the future. If chasing fails, then he would use deception. If deception fails, then he would continue to chase... After all he had plenty of time. In the future, he would just latch onto her.

Chapter 034 – The Guardian of the Hidden Treasure Pavilion

The night sky was like a heavy navy blue curtain. The few remaining stars hanging upon it were dim. The moonlight was obscured by very thick clouds, with feeble light seeping through.

In brief, it could be summarized into one short phrase: a moonless high wind night. It was the best day to commit a crime.

In the dark of night, two black silhouettes quietly disappeared from the farthest and smallest courtyard in Su Manor with a leopard's gracefulness.

Nangong Liuyun's speed was like lightning. Even though he was carrying Su Luo, he was still extremely fast.

The heavily guarded Manor of Great General Su, the protector of the country, was a place that made others flinch in fear. Yet he actually appeared to look casual, confident, and at ease; as if he was taking a leisurely stroll through his own back garden.

Nangong Liuyun was at attention, was sober and calm, and was also on sharp alert. He seem to be capable of anticipating danger in advance.

He lead Su Luo; sometimes they walked, and sometimes they stopped here and there. They occasionally hid in the shadows, hid in flowering shrubs once in a while, and sometimes flew on the top of trees. He was always one step ahead of the guards and was always well hidden when the patrol walked by.

Su Luo carefully memorized the route they walked in and the patrols they encountered with narrowed eyes and pupils dilated from the exhilaration.

It had been a long time since she felt this kind of blood boiling excitement.

What “leave the organization and live in seclusion within the forest and mountains”? As expected, in her bones, she really liked this type of crisis ridden dangerous situation; it truly made a person’s heart accelerate.

The corners of Su Luo’s mouth tilted into a smile of exhilaration.

Soon they arrived at the Hidden Treasure Pavilion.

The Hidden Treasure Pavilion was forbidden ground built in Su Manor’s backyard. This place was not an area that a normal person could get close to.

The Hidden Treasure Pavilion was only three stories high. The outside looked very plain and old; it completely lacked any magnificent and luxurious feelings.

At this time, the interior of the Hidden Treasure Pavilion was pitch-black. Not a trace of lamplight could be seen, and its main entrance was locked with a special mysterious iron padlock.

The mysterious iron padlock shone with a sliver of cold light under the moonlight.

The gate was not protected by a guard and was also soundless.

Nangong Liuyun made a simple gesture towards Su Luo, signaling that he would lure the opponents out for Su Luo to take the opportunity to enter and plunder.

In her previous life, Su Luo did a lot of similar stuff like this, so Su Luo clearly understood and nodded her head.

Nangong Liuyun indulgently patted her head. Under Su Luo's glowering gaze, he lifted his mouth into a devilishly charming smile, took the lead, and walked out.

His movements were very fast. He was like a flash of light and onlookers could scarcely see his figure. Even if they could see it clearly, they would only see a clump of shadows, and perhaps believed that their vision had become hazy.

His footsteps were even more agile. He was like a dragonfly that skipped on water; his footsteps seemed as if they never touched the ground.

Nangong Liuyun turned his body around like a sparrow hawk; his foot stepped off the ground and flew towards the second floor of the Hidden Treasure Pavilion. But right at this moment, in the depths of the darkness, a strong wind suddenly headed directly toward him.

He's here!

Nangong Liuyun's handsome face that was hidden behind the mask spread out into a smile. He did not retreat. From the pit of his stomach, he raised together a red-hot halo directly into his palm. Borrowing the power of the wind to strongly strike, he maneuvered it to mount a sneak attack against that person.

The sneak attack was mounted against none other than the guardian of the Hidden Treasure Pavilion.

This was a black robed elderly man. Only a body enveloped in the black robe could be seen; even his head was covered by a black mantle, and his face could not be clearly seen. But one could feel his ice-cold and murderous eyes.

If one spoke about seniority in the family hierarchy, this was Su Luo's second great uncle.

He was Su Luo's grandfather's second little brother. Since he was a child, he grew up immersed in martial arts. When he was young, he wandered the world but now came back, returned to the family, and guarded the Hidden Treasure Pavilion all year round.

It was also because of this sixth step expert for a guardian that there were only visitors and no successful robberies of any kind. Instead, they all lost their lives.

Therefore, from then on, the Hidden Treasure Pavilion only had this sixth step expert for a guardian.

This was Su Manor's secret. Outsiders were not aware of this, but naturally, Nangong Liuyun was an exception.

Chapter 035 – Strong intent to kill

The moonlight was hiding within the thick clouds; it only revealed a slight trace of light, making it hard to see clearly.

In the shadows of the night, Su Luo, who was hiding behind the pillars could not see clearly, but she didn't dare impudently look. She could only use her peripheral vision to see a little.

Su Bowu coldly stared at Nangong Liuyun as a trace of murderous intent flashed across his eyes: “The Treasure Pavilion is sacred ground. Unauthorized people should turn around and leave immediately.”

Nangong Liuyun laughed but his eyes were freezing cold. His manner was completely different from how he acted in front of Su Luo, “And if I insist on entering?”

“Kill without regard!” Su Bowu's voice was heartlessly grim and unfeeling. It faintly penetrated the dark night with a hair raising feeling of horror.

His voice revealed his self-assured confidence.

Over the years in the Su Manor, the Hidden Treasure Pavilion was always very safe because it was protected by this sixth step elder. Throughout the entire Eastern Ling Empire, there were very few who were stronger than a sixth step expert; they could all be counted on one hand.

This was why Su Bowu could have such confidence.

Prince Jin's entire body was hidden beneath a layer of black garments; the corner of his mouth curled up into a smile as his eyes flashed with an insolent fierceness: "Kill without regard? Then let's see who will kill whom."

"Such arrogance! Since you want to die so much, then this old man will grant your wish!" Su Bowu's mouth curled into an icy sneer, as his eyes now brimmed with murderous intent. A pair of eyes with a sinister gaze stared at Nangong Liuyun as if he was looking at a dead man.

After guarding the Hidden Treasure Pavilion for so many years, it was not as if he had never seen a thief before, but he had ever guarded against such an arrogant thief before.

Su Bowu had just barely finished speaking when a pair of scorching hot Iron Sand Palms was sent to attack Nangong Liuyun. The wind sent by the palm carried a flaming blaze that was hot enough to roast a person.

Su Bowu was a fire attribute mage. As a young man, he travelled across the entire world and his Iron Sand Palms were famous throughout the entire Eastern Ling Empire.

He was obviously infuriated by Nangong Liuyun since his first move was a killing strike.

Each move was heartless and unfeeling with a strong intent to kill.

Nangong Liuyun did not panic; the corner of his mouth slightly smirked as his eyes coldly pressured. His entire body was covered in thick unyielding power and awe-inspiring dignity.

The Iron Sand Palm brought a flaming blaze that aggressively headed toward him with threatening heat.

Nangong Liuyun turned both of his hands and clasped them together. As soon as he separated them, a huge round ball of water was pulled from the center of his palm and ejected forward——

When the Iron Sand Palm meet the ball of water, it was immediately extinguished.

A touch of astonishment flashed across Su Bowu's eyes. He never thought that this thief would have such high martial skills; unexpectedly, the thief was able to break through his most famous move.

“Good, since you're wholeheartedly begging to die, then have a taste of my Hell Fire!” Su Bowu's voice barely ended before both his hands successfully agglomerated individual fireballs. One after another, the fireballs attacked Nangong Liuyun and completely surrounded him in all directions.

“Ah——” Nangong Liuyun was unable to suppress a sudden cry of pain. His right hand held onto his left arm as he fiercely glared at Su Bowu. “As long as the mountains stand and rivers flow, till we meet again!”

The sound of his voice had not dropped and he simply withdrew using

a strange skill. But there was clearly a trace of shakyness to his stature, and he seem to be heavily injured.

“You want to come and go as you please? What kind of place do you think Su Manor is? Stay!” Su Bowu coldly snorted a few times and countless number of small fireballs shot towards Nangong Liuyun.

But it seemed as if Nangong Liuyun had eyes on the back of his head. He strangely dodged and side-stepped, and just couldn't get hit.

This time, he really angered Su Bowu!

He coldly snorted a few more times, and immediately moved his body to give chase!

But outside of his expectations, Nangong Liuyun's speed did not seem to slow down as he aimlessly fled all over Su Manor.

Chapter 036 – The stratagem of moving the tiger from the mountain

For a long time, Su Bowu could not chase him down. His heart become even more furious as he fiercely vowed to capture this shameless little thief and give him some serious punishment.

But how could he possibly know that Nangong Liuyun was not wounded, and was merely just initiating the stratagem of moving the tiger from the mountain.

The two person in pursuit were not quiet, and attracted a lot of people's attention.

Poor Su Bowu closely pursued without letting go, so he did not know that Su Luo on the other corner began to move.

Su Luo saw that all around her was quiet. There was not even a trace of a human shadow, and the corner of her mouth slowly raised into a sly smiling expression.

Indeed, this was the great Nangong Liuyun; his use of moving the tiger from the mountain was really entertaining.

At first Su Luo thought that Nangong Liuyun really did get hurt, but after seeing him having the relaxed frame of mind to throw her flirtatious glances while running away, she was reassured.

The mysterious iron lock was made by the number one cleverest craftsman in Eastern Ling; the lock's core was complicated and hard to solve, but this was merely to resist and unnerve others.

Having opened a variety of complex modern locks, Su Luo could not be stumped by this lock.

She retrieved a small thin hairpin and use it to fiddle around within the keyhole, both eyes vigilantly watched her surroundings, ears listening for movements in all directions.

Caution and prudence was her entire body's instinct.

She wholeheartedly used all three of her senses; her hand movement did not seem to slow down for she was quite familiar with this fiddling movement.

“Click....” in less than ten seconds, the legendary unconquerable mysterious iron lock fell into ruin in Su Luo's hand.

Thus, Su Luo quietly opened the lock, then hung it back on the door, and entered the room. Then she quietly closed the door with an movement that resembled moving clouds and flowing water, and smoothly completed in one go.

This lock was said to be made by the world's number one cleverest craftsman, but under Su Luo's omnipotent ability to open all locks, it collapsed at the first blow, and it was quickly cracked.

Entering the first floor of the Hidden Treasure Pavilion, Su Luo would not dare to light a lamp, because once a lamp gets lit in the room, assuredly, it was telling people: thieves are here, quickly catch them!

Fortunately Su Luo's vision was superb; to others this scene was pitch-dark, but for her, the line of sight was only slightly blurred.

The first floor lobby contains lots of shelves made out of pear tree wood. Every nook was also lined with small iron boxes and trunks.

Su Luo looked at it one by one. She discovered that they just common gold, silver, and pearl jewelry, while the iron boxes were full of gold and silver bars.

Although this stuff was very useful, she was only one person, and essentially cannot take them away.

Su Luo sighed with some regret and several reluctant-to-part backward glances at the valuable gold and silver treasure. Finally, she firmly turned around and nimbly stepped on the staircase, walking up step by step.

The stuff on the second floor was a little better than those on the first floor. It was full of rare medicinal herbs; Ginseng as thick as the back of one's hand, thousand year old Lingzhi Mushroom, Sky Mountain Snow Lotus and other types of very old medicinal herbs.

The air permeated with a dense herbal aroma.

Su Luo felt around for a long time at that place, but still did not find the Celestial Spirit water that she need. She secretly become anxious; she did not know where this treasure is hidden.

After much contemplation, the possibility that it was on the third floor was the greatest.

Su Luo's foot briefly touched the ground. With lithe agility, she reached for the staircase and after one sweeping movement, her figure flashed pass and arrived at the entrance to the third floor staircase.

She knew that now she needed to increase her pace.

Don't know how much longer Nangong Liuyun can stall Su Bowu.

If Su Bowu were to mentally recover, he would clearly see through this stratagem of moving the tiger from the mountain and return. She would then bump into him head on and this good-for-nothing would not be able to beat him.

Or if her father Su Zian heard the movements inside Su Manor, with meticulous care would come and inspect the Hidden Treasure Pavilion. Then she really will be exposed, at that time she won't even know how to cry.

Chapter 037 – Acquired too easily

Su Luo quietly got to the third floor.

Throughout the Hidden Treasure Pavilion, there were only three floors. If it was not here, then she did not know what else she could do

The space on the third floor was much smaller than the two floors below.

Also, the shelves were crowded with books. This gave Su Luo much more work to do.

When Su Luo took a closer and more careful look, she realized that they were not martial art secrets, but some general history of the continent and as well as some of the principles and practice of the six major elements.

How strange, these were common books, why treasure them enough to put it on the third floor?

Logically, wouldn't the third floor have the most precious treasures?

Su Luo was a bit confused.

Eh?— As Su Luo's eyes fell off the shelves, her body suddenly paused and her eyes flashed with a trace of excitement.

With her carefully honed killer instinct, she noticed that the books in the front of the shelf seemed amiss.

This collection was placed in a purple wooden box, a total of nine were standing vertically on the shelf.

The reason why it was so strange, was because the other books were covered in dust. But these books...

They seemed to be touched often by somebody; the surface of the book was smooth and clean.

It was also possible that the owner cherished it a lot and would wipe it often

Su Luo's mouth dropped into a sly smile.

This was it.

Su Luo's hand played around with the box. However, there was not the slightest reaction.

How come?

Su Luo slightly wrinkled her eyebrows as she thought about it, and then decided to take the books out one by one.

She would move one book out, stop, then carefully listen if anything happened.

When she got to the sixth book, she suddenly felt the book was stuck. But no matter what she did, she couldn't get it out.

When she took another careful look over the book, she suddenly laughed. As expected, this book was the most important.

Suddenly, the book she was holding had been abruptly taken out.

“Wooosh——” A small sound suddenly resounded in the dark, Su Luo discovered that the sound came from below her feet.

Su Luo faced the direction the sound came from and took a look.

At this time, one meter in front of her, the floor slowly opened, revealing a small black hole about the size of ten square centimeters; something that you wouldn't see if you weren't looking carefully.

Su Luo went over, crouched down, and was surprised to see a small palm-sized box.

The small box was made of rosewood, surrounded by a faint rosewood fragrance.

The small box was not locked, so Su Luo could easily open it.

Inside the box was a small jade bottle.

Su Luo looked at it carefully. It was a flawlessly white jade bottle, with no labels on its surface; just from its exterior, it was fundamentally impossible to see anything.

Su Luo slowly opened the bottle and sniffed it. Suddenly, an unknown fragrance spread out.

It was fresh and elegant; this smell made people relax.

This kind of fragrance was exactly the same as what Nangong Liuyun had described.

Turns out this was Celestial spirit water.

It was really acquired too easily.

But this was also thanks to Su Luo's professionalism from the past. If she wasn't so careful in all aspects, even if she searched the entire Hidden Treasure Pavilion, it would've been impossible to find.

Su Luo took the small bottle of water together with the box into her arms.

It was not because she liked the rosewood box, but because she had another use for it. Not only that, it would be very useful too.

Now that she had already gotten what she wanted, it was natural to quickly leave.

But before withdrawing, that purple fish jade pendant shall be of great use.

Chapter 038 – When meeting face to face on a narrow path, the brave will be victorious.

The corner of Su Luo's lips turned into a nefarious and charming sneer.

Su Jingyu, wasn't it you who wrongly accused me? Framed me? Then I'll let you experience what it's really like to be wrongly accused and to be framed!

Giving him a taste of his own medicine; Su Luo was very familiar with this type of thing.

Looking at that tiny black hole, Su Luo's mouth tilted into a smirk, and then ruthlessly tossed the jade fish pendant into the hole. Moreover, she did not even bother to close the mechanism and immediately prepared to leave.

But at this time, suddenly from outside the sound of hubbub could be heard.

Faintly, torch light could be seen coming closer.

Su Luo moved close to the window and looked out, her heart tensed.

What bad luck. Su Zian really did bring people over.

Looks like he was not that stupid. He finally thought to check on the

Hidden Treasure Pavilion.

Originally, if she did not find the Celestial Spirit water in the Hidden Treasure Pavilion, Su Luo planned to conceal herself in the hidden corners on the third floor.

Humans had innate habits. If Su Zian saw the disorder on the third floor, his first reaction was to check on the most precious treasure in his collection and look to see if it was stolen. This way, Su Luo who was hiding in a dark corner could clearly see the place where he stashed the treasure.

But now, since she had already obtained the Celestial Spirit water from the box, she did not have to waste more effort.

But Su Luo could totally imagine it. When her cheap father walked up to the third floor and sees the disordered scene in front of him, it was very likely that he would be so furious that he might even die from anger.

Just thinking about this made Su Luo's mood especially happy.

Seeing that the pursuing force was about to arrive, Su Luo did not panic then. Many years as an assassin had trained her to possess formidable courage and wisdom.

She did not go downstairs. Rather, she nimbly climbed out the window, and with a leopard cat grace and quickness, quietly slid down the pillar.

With an effort that lasted a blink of an eye, she now stood at the foot of

the wall.

At this time, she did not flee in the direction of her distant courtyard, but towards Su Jingyu's courtyard.

On the pathway not far from Su Jingyu's courtyard, Su Luo unfortunately came across a person. This person was none other than the person Su Luo ruthlessly kicked into the wall three days ago, until she fainted dead away, Nanny Gui.

Nanny Gui had just regained consciousness today. She struggled to get up because she wanted to go to Madam's courtyard, tattletale to the Madam about who severely wounded her, and also had to tell Madam to carefully guard against that Fourth Miss.

So at this time, Nanny Gui, with the support of a maid, slowly walked toward Madam's courtyard step by step.

Madam's courtyard was very close to Su Jingyu's courtyard. This narrow cobblestoned path was the only route, so she and Su Luo met face to face on this narrow path.

As a result, when Su Luo violently charged out of the side path, she saw Nanny Gui at first glance.

“AHH—” When the little maid saw the masked person in black cloth, she subconsciously shouted out loud.

Nanny Gui originally could resist for a while, but who told her not to

heal first from her serious wounds? Her head was knocked until it was confused and dizzy; her butt ached to the point that it felt as if it would cracked wide open. Thus, she did not have the strength or time to put up any resistance. Su Luo chopped towards her with a knife in hand and immediately killed off Nanny Gui.

Originally, Su Luo did not wish to kill Nanny Gui, but she could see at a glance that Nanny Gui was unsettled and this old witch was currently heading toward Madam's courtyard; she was going there to tattletale.

The current Su Luo did not have the slightest spirit strength, so on this continent, she didn't even have the strength to protect herself. Consequently, she had keep a low-profile at the moment. She had to conceal her strength and bide her time.

If Madam knew of her talent and shrewdness, it would perhaps not be as convenient when conducting such clandestine actions in the future.

Chapter 039 – The wicked sneer

Su Xi was easy to deceive, but that Madam Su may not be. Thus, Su Luo made a preemptive strike to kill Nanny Gui, and the death would end all her troubles.

In any case, Nanny Gui's offense was the former mistreatment of this body's original owner, so she should have died long ago!

Moreover, since she was now dead, this would also get rid of Madam's right hand man. Acting upon her own matters would be much easier in the future.

This was a move that would let her gain many benefits, which was why Su Luo in one strike hacked Nanny Gui to death without the slightest of hesitation .

However, Su Luo let the little maid go and only knocked her unconscious.

Because it was useful to leave the maid alive, as at a future time, she might be expected to testify.

After disposing those two, Su Luo rapidly sped up as her figure flashed away like lightning.

Her footsteps temporarily stopped, then darted toward Su Jingyu's Heaven and Earth courtyard. Her small body was like that of an leopard

cat, light and nimble.

Not long after, she arrived at the Heaven and Earth courtyard.

Tonight, Su Jinyu did not go out, and instead stayed in his room to cultivate.

“There’s an assassin!” Su Luo lowered her voice and deliberately shouted out.

She purposefully created a racket outside so the people in the courtyard could see a black shadow leaping in.

“There’s an assassin, capture the assassin!”

There was no end to the people swiftly calling out the same warning.

Su Jinyu’s brows tightly knitted because in his eyes, this noise disturbed his cultivation.

But the clamor outside seemed to have the tendency to only get bigger and bigger.

He had no choice but to stand up and walk out his door.

And at the exact time he walked out, Su Luo nevertheless, took advantage of the confusion and quietly flashed into the interior of the

room.

Seeing that not a soul was in sight, the corner of her mouth raised into a wicked sneer. In regards to the next item in this program, she was really really enthusiastically looking forward to it.

Su Jingyu ah, Su Jingyu. You were the one who walked out to give me this opportunity. When that time comes, you can't really blame me.

Su Luo swiftly removed the small box from her bosom and picked up the bottle of Celestial Spirit Water. She was just about to close the box when right at that time——

Borrowing the bright candlelight, she saw a slip of old-fashioned paper pressed underneath the box. She picked it up to get a closer look and discovered that the paper looked like a map. But it had crooked lines and was hard to comprehend.

And also this map was incomplete. It ought to be only a quarter of the original map.

What kind of map is this? It's also suffused in yellow. It seems to be really old. Su Luo frowned as a trace of uncertainty flashed across her eyes.

But it was placed together with the Celestial Spirit Water so presumably, it was also something precious. After all, she could not let Su Jingyu off so lightly.

Based on her “take any advantage presented and not taking would be stupid” moral principle, Su Luo simply collected the map into her bosom.

Then she took off her black cloth, the cloth wrapped around her face and hair, and even the brocade box. All of it were stuffed together under the bed.

Her actions were extremely fast; the matter was completed before the time it takes a flint to light a fire.

As she looked at the things stuffed underneath the bed that deliberately exposed a little bit of black cloth, Su Luo’s mouth hooked into a cold smile.

Su Jingyu, is it fun to wrongly accuse someone? Then I’ll let you really have fun playing this game. Hopefully, you won’t play to death this time, because your little sister still has a lot of fun tricks waiting for you.

Su Luo took one last glance at the room. After confirming that she did not leave any errors, she lept out the window and her small body rapidly vanished into the blackness of the dark night.

On the other side, after Nangong Liuyun received Su Luo’s signal, he quickly followed behind her in a spontaneous fashion and the growing tail of people headed toward Su Jingyu’s Heaven and Earth courtyard.

Since this was a framing, then she clearly must let this play be acted out fully.

Chapter 040 – Arrogant brazen thieves (1)

Su Zian did not know that Su Luo had already fled. At this moment, he was just about to enter the Hidden Treasure Pavilion.

However, when he saw the chains hanging on the door, his facial expression became very ugly.

This chain was made by the best craftsmen in the capital. It could only be opened by the key hanging on his body.

But right now, this lock had been opened by someone else. Moreover, it was hanging in an obviously mocking manner.

Su Zian's expression now became abnormally stiff. He pushed open the door and loudly shouted with anger: "Light the lamps!"

Very quickly, the guard at his side handed him a lantern. Soon after, he lit the candles in the room.

The first floor looked messy and was in disorder. It only took a glance to clearly see that someone had rummaged through it.

This thief was incomparably arrogant and brazen; he didn't even bother to put stuff back in place!

He stepped onto the second floor.

It was obvious that the second floor had also been rummaged through but it didn't seem as though anything was missing.

But if this was the case... Su Zian's countenance became even more unsightly, because he knew that this thief must be an expert. If he was not impressed with the first and second floor, then his goal pointed to the third floor.

Sure enough!

When Su Zian walked to the third floor and saw the situation in hall, his brain immediately buzzed with noise. A sweet taste entered his throat and a mouthful of blood had almost been spat out on the spot.

It only took him one glance to see the small black hole in the floorboard! It was the place where the Celestial Spirit Water was stored.

Aside from his ancestors, only he knew about this place, but now it had been opened by someone else!

Su Zian could only feel his limbs go numb, and he was almost unable to stand properly.

Steadying his mind, he boosted his spirits to look forward and discovered that the wooden box stored there disappeared without a trace.

So hateful, so aggravating!

Su Zian was so infuriated that he threw up a mouthful of blood on the spot.

The Celestial Spirit Water placed in that small box was the Su Manor's most precious treasure!

But what angered him even more in addition to the Celestial Spirit Water, was the hidden treasure map. That hidden treasure map was actually the most precious thing!

It was a map to open the legendary Secluded Necropolis of the Gods. Even the most powerful experts on the continent were searching for it. Although it was only a fragment, if this hidden treasure map were to appear, then the entire country will be in chaos.

And now it had been stolen along with the Celestial Spirit Water.

Su Zian's entire body trembled with fury and could not say anything for a while. He felt like he was going to go crazy.

"Search! We must find the thieves!" Hack them into pieces! Su Zian was so angry that he trembled from head to toe.

Suddenly, his eyes saw something in the black hole. After picking it up, he saw a purple fish jade pendant.

Could this purple fish jade pendant be left by the thieves?

What is this? Steal something and leave something as a calling card? What arrogant brazen thieves!

Su Zian believed that if this thief was standing in front of him right now, he would definitely strangle him to death.

Unfortunately, he did not know that the thief he hated until his teeth itched, was actually his good-for-nothing daughter who did not know any martial arts.

“Take this jade pendant to the Mercenary Union. Ask them to find all the information regarding this jade pendant as soon as possible!” Su Zian believed that if he found the origin of this jade pendant, then tonight’s thieves would not be able to hide.

He must find the thieves and let them see that Su Manor was not a place where they could come and go as they pleased!

But at this time, the guard’s manner seemed hesitant. It seemed as if he wanted to speak but stopped.

“Why haven’t you left yet!” Su Zian angrily roared.

“Great general, this jade pendant.... This, this humble servant has seen it before.” The guard hesitantly hummed and hawed.

“You’ve seen it before? Where have you seen it before?” Su Zian’s entire

body was startled with excitement and inconceivably stared at the other party.

Chapter 041 – Arrogant brazen thieves (2)

“It’s at....it’s at....” The guard was afraid to speak the truth. If he wronged the young master, then that would mean... At this time, he was so regretful that he want to slap himself in the face. If only he did not say anything a moment ago.

“Speak!” Su Zian kicked toward the guard and heavily flipped him to the ground.

“It’s.... It’s the young master!” The guard spat out a mouth of blood because of the kick. He covered his stomach and loudly exclaimed, “This jade pendant belongs to the young master!”

“What did you say!” Su Zian severely kicked him again, “Couldn’t you have named anyone? To actually say this jade pendant belongs to the young master? Impossible!”

At this moment, a person loudly reported back.

“Great General! That thief entered the young master’s Heaven and Earth courtyard and then disappeared!”

This sentence that fell like sweet rain, immediately saved the guard’s life.

“What did you say? That thief disappeared after entering young master’s courtyard?” Su Zian’s cold expression became terrifying. He

grabbed the servant's collar with a cruel and fierce expression, "Repeat what you just said!"

This guard did not know what had happened here; he was only here to report what had happened so when Su Zian lifted him up by the collar, he had a puzzled expression on his face, but he still disjointedly repeated. "This servant is not lying, that thief really did disappear in young master's courtyard. Also... Also Nanny Gui was killed on the path not too far from Young Master's courtyard, there is also a maid as proof...."

Now, almost all of the evidence pointed to Su Jingyu.

However, Su Zian still would not believe it.

Su Jingyu was the son he highly regarded. He was none other than the Su Manor's successor; he simply did not have a reason to do this!

Not possible, this is absolutely impossible!

No matter what was said Su Zian could not believe that the son he had personally educated would betray him.

But the thief really did disappear into the Heaven and Earth courtyard, so he had to personally go and clear up this matter.

Su Zian took a group of people and the grandiose parade of people darted towards the Heaven and Earth courtyard.

As they arrived at the Heaven and Earth courtyard, he found Su Bowu confronting Su Jingyu.

“Jingyu!” Su Zian coldly stared at him, “What do you think you are doing? Deceive your teacher and wipe out the tribe?”

Su Jingyu was just about to fight with Su Bowu, but after seeing Su Zian, he hurriedly said toward Su Zian: “Father, you’re finally here, you must help and make the decision! I really don’t know what happened, but Second Grand Uncle keeps on vigorously insisting that I am a thief.”

Su Zian looked at Su Bowu.

Su Bowu sneered : “If it’s not you then who? That thief is hiding in your courtyard. If you are innocent, then why won’t you let people search it?”

“Second Uncle...” Su Zian was just about to speak, but was interrupted by Su Bowu.

“Zian, Second Uncle personally saw the thief run into the Heaven and Earth courtyard. Even if Jingyu is your son, he can not escape this responsibility.” That thief was heavily wounded and walked with wavering steps; he simply could not have run far. If not for Su Jingyu strongly blocking the path, then he would have already caught the culprit.

Su Zian’s entire face filled with grief as he finally closed his eyes, and painfully said: “Second uncle... The Hidden Treasure Pavilion was robbed.”

“What did you say!” Su Bowu’s facial expression suddenly changed. It become ugly, “What was stolen?”

“Celestial Spirit Water, and also... the hidden treasure map...” Su Zian was so depressed that he wanted to hit the wall!

Su Bowu’s expression become even more ugly. He unsteadily swayed and almost spit out a mouth full of blood.

He only realized now, that the opponent had used the stratagem of moving the tiger from the mountain!

The opponent tricked him away and afterwards, another person took the opportunity to sneak into the Hidden Treasure Pavilion. After thinking this far, Su Bowu wished he could harshly pound his own head.

Chapter 042 – Arrogant brazen thieves (3)

Su Bowu frigidly glanced at Su Jingyu, he said coldly, “Go in and search!”

“Honorable father!” Su Jingyu had a lost expression; he didn’t know what he did wrong. What Celestial Spirit Water, what hidden treasure map, he really didn’t understand, alright?

“Guards, tie up Su Jingyu!” Su Bowu’s expression is livid, without any mercy.

“Honorable father!” Su Jingyu’s eyes flashed with alarm.

Su Zian coldly glanced once at Su Jingyu and bitterly said, “A real article can not be faked, a fake can not be real. If you are proven to be innocent, then nobody can wrongly accuse you.”

After he finished speaking, he waved his hands, expression full of dignity: “Go in and search!”

At the sound of the order, a troop of over twenty guards immediately flocked in and quickly dispersed to search each of the rooms in the Heaven and Earth courtyard.

Su Zian and Su Bowu were also not idle; the two’s gazes swept over the courtyard like lightning, afraid of missing any information.

After searching the outer courtyard rooms, Su Zian followed the guards and stepped into the inner bedroom.

They searched once but nothing was found.

Su Zian's eyes held a complex expression. He was grateful since this matter had nothing to do with his son, but was depressed because he couldn't find any clues.

But right at this moment, a guard suddenly shouted out loud: "What is that?"

His finger pointed towards under the bed. There was a faint black shadow there; it was faintly discernable under the gloomy lamp light.

"Take it out and let's have a look!" At this time, Su Zian's expression became ashen.

That guard obeyed the command and quickly laid on the ground. He stretched out his hand and pulled the thing out.

"This is..." Su Zian saw the bundle of black clothing and his facial expression become as dark as the black clothing; so black that his original color could not be seen.

At this time, his mind echoed with a buzzing sound, as he crumbled even faster than a lost battle would make him.

He never would have thought, that this search actually found something...

His line of sight lowered, and he actually saw a familiar small wooden box.

Suddenly, Su Zian and Su Bowu's facial expression's instantly turned pale.

Because both of them recognized it; this little box was the box that the Celestial Spirit Water was stored in.

But now the box was completely empty. Not even mentioning the Celestial Spirit Water, even the hidden treasure map that was tucked underneath disappeared without a trace.

Su Zian's eyes fixated on Su Jingyu like a viper. In a single move, he clutched his throat and loudly shouted with anger: "Unfilial son! Quickly speak, where did the Celestial Spirit Water go? Also, where is the hidden treasure map? Quickly speak!!"

At this time, all the evidence and all the coincidences pointed to Su Jingyu. Even if he had a hundred mouths to argue, it was beyond his ability to deny.

Su Jingyu was extremely innocent, and was also very much at a loss: "Father, what are you guys talking about? What Celestial Spirit Water? What hidden treasure map?" How could he recognize every word when apart, but did not understand when they were put together?

“You’re still pretending to be innocent in front of this daddy, speak! Where is the Celestial Spirit Water? Was it not you who drank it? Quick speak, if not, your daddy here will choke you to death!” At this time, Su Zian was truly infuriated.

That Celestial Spirit Water was a treasure that could promote a cultivator’s rank, his old father wanted to use it to break through to the seventh step, but kept saving it. And now, it had actually been stolen by another!

If his old father could break through to the seventh step rank, then their Su Manor would jump up to become Eastern Ling Empire’s number one family.

But right now it was gone... Everything was gone. He wasn’t sure if his old father, after coming out from closed door practice, would be angry enough to spit blood.

“Father... I really don’t know. I really didn’t steal it!” Su Jingyu’s mouth continued to shout that he had been wronged.

In fact, he really was innocent. But who told him to offend the spiteful Su Luo?

Chapter 043 – Hidden treasure map fragment appears (1)

“What is this?” Su Zian silently endured the pain as he tossed that purple fish jade pendant to him.

“Purple fish jade pendant?”

“Isn’t this yours?” Su Zian’s overcast eyes surveyed him. He continuously sneered as he watched Su Jingyu’s pair of trembling legs.

“It indeed belongs to this son, but this son had carelessly lost it three days ago.”

“Lost it? Now you’re saying that you lost it?” Su Zian repeatedly sneered and drew closer, step by step.

“Lock him up and thoroughly interrogate him! Even if that thief is not him, the thief can not be unrelated to him.” Su Bowu picked up the now warm purple fish pendant as his eyes flashed with viciousness.

Su Manor’s small remote courtyard.

The entire Su Manor was brightly light up and was incomparably noisy. Only this remote small courtyard was as silent as the depths of the night.

After Nangong Liuyun got rid of the people tailing him, he grinning happily as he ran off to find Su Luo.

At this time, he had already changed out of the night clothes covering his body.

He was dressed entirely in a fast flowing soft gorgeous robe made of golden silk. The soft golden silk robe was embroidered with fragments of gold that glittered with the luster of gems. The luxurious soft robe's hem was like a warm cloud spread out in an arc, layer upon layer, it flowed with light that restrained the shadows.

The soft breeze brushed by, and the wind-borne light tassels under his jade belt willfully danced about.

Both of his hands encircled in his arms. He was laid-back, confident and at ease while reclining under a very tall and straight Chinese snowball viburnum tree.

April was overflowing with the beginning of spring; this great big cherry tree proudly stood upright in the courtyard. Sections of captivating red snowball viburnum flowers fluttered about. The sweet fragrance overflowed in four directions and the dense mist was mesmerizing.

The him at this moment, was as handsome as the main male character walking out of a painting. His silhouette was like a sculpture from ancient Greece; sharp, and distinct. It was gentle and languid. His enchanting light smile held such devilish charm.

“How was it? This king's performance wasn't that bad right?” Nangong Liuyun reclined under the Chinese snowball tree. His slender hands encircled in his arms and he lightly smiled as he enchantingly stared at

Su Luo.

“Barely passable.” Su Luo sat on the stone chair in the courtyard. A pot of clear tea was placed on the stone table in front of her. Tea fragrance curled upwards and lingered into a dense mist.

This time, she was dressed in a pure white bright robe with a butterfly playing on daffodils. Her jet black hair was held back with a light purple ribbon and a few silken strands of beautiful hair mischievously hung down from both shoulders, revealing a sparkling and translucent gloss. The garment lining blew by teasingly, touching the delicate beautiful skin that seemed to be made of porcelain.

Facing her neither warm nor cold attitude, Nangong Liuyun not only did not mind, but instead raised his face and leaned in. He leaned in to the closest distance possible. Hot air fluttered to her ears with a deep and affectionate voice: “ Good girl, did you get the Celestial Spirit Water?”

“Of course, didn’t you see who set out on this campaign?” Any missions Su Luo went on, never had a record of failure. Even if it was now the olden times and the difficulty had been increased numerous times, it was still not too difficult for her.

She handed him the Celestial Spirit Water. The expression in her eyes seem pleased with herself, “I actually thought it would be heavily guarded, but it’s only like this.”

Nangong Liuyun indulgently pampered her and used his long and smooth slim fingers to poke her forehead: “Keep bragging. If not for this king having drawn away that old man, do you really think it would have

been this simple?”

“Oh right, what kind of map is this? Have you seen it before?” Su Luo sulkily rolled her eyes. Then, she handed that inundated yellow piece of paper to Nangong Liuyun.

She had no idea what the crooked weird words on it meant.

Nangong Liuyun took it and carefully looked at it.

His expression originally held a hint of crooked smile, but after a quarter of an hour, his expression began to slightly change.

Something that can change the expression on Prince Jin’s face was presumably not a simple thing.

Su Luo curiously blinked her beautiful vividly touching eyes: “What? Could it be a real hidden treasure map?”

“Where did you get this?” Nangong Liuyun asked in a rare and serious tone of voice.

Chapter 044 – Hidden treasure map fragment appears (2)

“It’s not something I was specifically searching for, it was hidden in the box with the Celestial Spirit Water. I originally wanted to use the box to frame Su Jingyu, but after seeing this piece of paper, I pulled it out right away, as to avoid letting Su Jingyu off lightly.” Su Luo very innocently, blinked her eyes; she even shrugged her shoulders.

Nangong Liuyun was so excited to the point of being speechless as he stared at Su Luo. A short time later, he used a little more force to rub her head: “Girl what did you eat when growing up? How could you be so lucky? Went to steal Celestial Spirit Water and can also come out with a hidden treasure map.”

Although he was the legendary prideful son of heaven, God’s favorite, compared to Luo girl’s luck... He really felt all kinds of great admiration and envy.

Within these short few days of interacting with her, it looked like, not only was her innate spiritual talent of the high class purple rank with wood-fire dual elements to cultivate as an Apothecary, she was also a space mage, and now, she actually coincidentally fished out a piece of hidden treasure map to the Secluded Divine Shrine!

Thinking about that really made him have the urge to run into a wall.

Nangong Liuyun could not help but secretly guess: This girl, could she be the illegitimate daughter of the Goddess of Fortune?

As Su Luo was stared at by his deep eyes, she grew a little hesitant. Her slender fingers poked him in the arm: “I’m asking you a question. Quickly, speak, could it be that this is a real hidden treasure map?”

“It’s undeniably the real deal.” Nangong Liuyun said with certainty, his tone seemed to lack strength; it was very clear that he still had not recovered his thoughts from the blow.

“Then it is really valuable?” Su Luo raised her palm sized small face as her beautiful eyes reflected the flowing water’s radiance.

“How could the word valuable be used to describe it?” Nangong Liuyun’s facial expression did not agree, “This is simply a priceless treasure. The Celestial Spirit Water can’t even be mentioned on equal terms with it.”

“Is that true or fake?” Su Luo immediately become exhilarated. She doubtfully looked at her own pair of white tender hands. These hands’ luck was really that godlike?

“How could I lie to you? This fragment is one piece of the Secluded Necropolis of the Gods’ map. Secluded Necropolis of the Gods... That is an existence which transcended endless years. Rumor has it, people coming out of there, even those considered most ordinary, can exterminate a country on this continent in one move.”

“One of the most ordinary of persons from there, could destroy a country in only one move?” No matter how calm Su Luo was, she still cannot avoid opening wide her beautiful misty eyes.

This, how could this let people live? Su Luo simply could not imagine it. Even if an extremely strong person came over, how could he annihilate a country with only one move? This is simply... unimaginable!

“This is indeed what the legends say.” Nangong Liuyun’s pair of beautiful eyes became deep and mysterious. He faintly said. “It has been said that there was a struggle between experts of the Secluded place many years ago. They all died in the final charge; the bodies of the extremely strong practitioners were buried in the Secluded Necropolis of the Gods.”

Nangong Liuyun paused. A pair of beautiful abstruse eyes seriously gazed at Su Luo, “Including all the divine artifacts they had on their person; those were also buried in the Secluded Necropolis of the Gods.”

Divine artifacts carried by extremely strong practitioners....Su Luo sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

Let’s first not speak of extremely strong people; if speaking about even one random ordinary person that came from the Secluded place, that person could annihilate this entire city’s strongest experts in one move.

And now, divine artifacts of extremely strong practitioners were buried there in the Secluded Necropolis of the Gods... Even thinking about it would make one’s mouth water.

“I really want to go there and dig for treasure, ahh.” Things like unearthing treasure was something she really loved to do.

“That’s something you have to wait for.” Nangong Liuyun’s jet black eyes faintly glowed like obsidian. He smiled lightly as he rubbed her head, as if stroking a pet, “For the current you, forget about the first step, you don’t even have the most basic of spiritual power. How could you get there?”

Fine. Su Luo admitted it; the blow hit her where it counted.

Chapter 045 – A tiger doesn't show its might so you treat me like a sick cat (1)

“Besides, there are three other hidden treasure map fragments. Who knows where they're hidden.” Nangong Liuyun silently looked at Su Luo, “Girl, your luck makes me speechless. I really suspect, that one day when your eyes are closed, the hidden treasure map will voluntarily fly in front of you. Looks like this important task can only be assigned to you.”

But later in the future, Nangong Liuyun really did look on helplessly as a piece of the hidden treasure map voluntarily flew into Su Luo's hand. At that time he thought back to the words he said today with a tearful expression... and directly said that he was the emperor of predictions.

“Whether someone has good luck depends on a person's character.” Su Luo vaguely taunted Nangong Liuyun with those words, “Oh yeah, since I now have Spatial Grass and Celestial Spirit Water, then at what time will we go look for the dragon's blood?”

As a result of tonight's fight between Nangong Liuyun and Su Bowu, Su Luo understood that in this world, having real strength was the way of a king.

Delaying the opening of her space would delay her wood-fire dual element cultivation, which would really making things difficult for her.

This kind of feeling was like being fully aware that you had a treasure mountain but did not have the key. It was really depressing.

Nangong Liuyun stroked her head, his phoenix-like eyes slightly narrowed as he spoke in a slightly doting and indulgent tone: “When do you want to go?”

“Let’s talk after this matter settles down a little.” Su Luo sighed; she seriously gave herself a difficult problem.

Sunset Mountain Range was not that close; a round trip, even if it was a smooth one, would still take a month to complete.

If she was to suddenly disappear now, her cheap father would switch his suspicious gaze onto her; that was anything but reassuring.

Looks like she had to think of a way, to secretly disappear for a period of time.

Su Luo’s beautiful eyes narrowed, lost in contemplation....

But Su Luo never would have thought that before she could think of a solution, there was already someone who had voluntarily delivered themselves to her door and helped her solve the problem.

This person was not a stranger; it was Su Luo’s third elder sister, Su Wan.

On that day, Su Luo went for a walk after eating lunch.

Coming back, she discovered her courtyard had been smashed into smithereens by someone. Her only maid Lu Luo was smacked until her complexion was red and swollen, and her body was beaten black and

blue.

And at this time, Su Wan was still there showing off her martial prowess one lash after another, whipping Lu Luo as if she was whipping a dog!

“Stop!” Su Luo’s eyes narrowed as she loudly shouted.

Su Wan turned her head around and saw Su Luo. She disdainfully swept her over and then used her whip to lash toward her!

Su Luo clenched her hand and grabbed the tail of the whip as her eyes flashed with a hint of coldness: “Are you courting death?”

The corner of Su Wan’s mouth revealed a mocking expression: “Su Luo, a noble person should know her stuff. How can you, an ordinary person, speak like this to me? Are you thinking of courting death?”

Su Wan was now a first step martial artist. Although it wasn’t sufficient to be near the top, she felt superior compared to the good for nothing Su Luo.

Su Luo coldly smiled: “Then can I ask this noble first step marital artist, your eminence coming to my small courtyard, is to get rid of anger against whom?”

“Su Luo, you’re still trying to hide it even now? Humph! That day at the lotus pond, you saw it didn’t you?!” Since that day, Su Wan was continuously humiliated and insulted by Su Xi; she really was unable to

live through those kind of days.

Later on, she accidentally learned that day Su Luo actually passed by that place from the mouth of a maid. When she recalled how sorry she looked and was seen by Su Luo, a whiff of anger could not be suppressed and belched out.

But Su Wan would never think that not only had Su Luo passed by that place, she was actually the originator of the incident.

If Su Wan knew, then perhaps she might even have the heart to kill Su Luo.

In front of others, Su Wan was gentle and kind, but in front of Su Luo, she would undoubtedly reveal her true nature. She was just simply too lazy to pretend!

Chapter 046 – A tiger doesn't show its might so you treat me like a sick cat (2)

The corner of Su Luo's mouth curved into a sarcastic arc. "That day, the matter at the lotus pond? Oh, third elder sister, are you talking about that day when you fell into the lotus pond? During that time, you rushed out, but suddenly encountering the big fire, you jumped in again. In the end, you got thrown out by someone, and as a result, embarrassed yourself in front of countless people from the aristocratic families' younger generation. Was it this matter you were referring to?"

"You— you really saw that," Su Wan angrily shrieked.

"Yes, I was also looking at it freely and honestly. What's it to you? Third elder sister, since it's something you did, why would you be afraid of it being seen by others?" The corner of Su Luo's mouth rose into a taunting grin. Her beautiful eyes were emitting bursts of frigid rays of light.

A person's evil nature could really be frighteningly hideous, and she specialized in picking up a soft touch to pinch.

When Su Xi bullied her in this way, she dared not to resist, because in Su Xi's eyes, she was just a good-for-nothing. If her heart became angry she would unleash it on Su Luo. This could only be called really 'intolerably bullying'!

But this was not the first time. In fact, this kind of stuff had occurred many times in the past!

“Su Luo! You deserve to die! You wretched good for nothing bitch!” Everything she had experienced that day, had become pain that would be carved into Su Wan’s heart for a lifetime. When she recalled what happened that day, she really want to choke Su Xi to death.

Su Wan, no matter what, could not pull back her whip.

When the whip drew close enough, Su Luo grabbed the whip’s tail, and stressing each syllable she said, “Su Wan, you are nothing but a first ranked martial artist. You are also born of a concubine, yet you always act like a stuck-up in front of me, feeling superior and harshly lording over me. A first-ranked martial artist, what’s so great about that?”

“A good for nothing like you will never understand the world of practitioners. Go die!”

Su Wan abandoned the whip, then with one palm, very harshly slapped toward Su Luo.

Su Luo laughed coldly in her heart. She stook a step back and avoided the surprise attack. Afterwards, the whip in her hand turned over, changing directions, and very harshly whipped toward Su Wan’s face.

Swoosh...

The crisp sound of the whip resounded.

This lash not only landed on Su Wan's face with ferocious strength, it even send her flying away for a few meters.

At this time, Su Luo's facial expression was very cruel and ice-cold, similar to a demon from hell, that could make a person's heart tremble.

Slowly her mouth arched into an ice-cold sneer. "Being an ordinary person and striking the face of a first ranked martial artist... it feels very invigorating."

At this moment, she quietly and motionlessly stood there for a long time. The wind gently raised her garment. The corner of her skirt fluttering like the dazzling cherry blossom.

Su Luo's cruel and ice-cold words, when posed in such cold and threatening manner, sounded near Su Wan's ear.

Su Wan, who was whipped flying, smashed very heavily into the corner of the wall. She immediately issued a miserable scream.

A distinct whip mark appeared on her face. The whip mark cracked open and blood kept flowing. The wound looked horrible.

Su Wan touched the wound with her hands. Her eyes were full of astonishment, but she unwaveringly stared at Su Luo, full of hatred. "You...."

Watching Su Luo's cold eyes was like looking at a thousand-year-old cold ice; they were completely lacking in emotion. A hint of fear flashed

through her heart, like a small part of a cold idea frantically initiating from the bottom jumped up.

How can it be like this? Su Luo she....she is only a good-for-nothing. How could....how could she have such a cruel expression in her eyes? Her deterrent force at this time unexpectedly is stronger than even our imposing grandfather's, this, how was this possible?

Su Wan's heart became bewildered and unsettled.

Also at this time, Lu Luo was completely shocked.

This was awe-inspiring. It made people want to revere the young lady. Her black hair was adrift from being wind-borne. Her small face may have been extremely beautiful, but it was also full of callousness and the determination to vanquish; This released an imposing manner that made people afraid to look at directly.

At this moment she was dazzling like the convergence of all the sunlight.

This person...this person is really the mistress? She really served this person from childhood to adult? Is she really that idiot mistress that allowed others to bully her?

“What's so great about a first ranked martial artist, if she was still whipped flying by this good-for-nothing? So, over the years, what were you so proud off?” Su Luo crouched down, eyes full of arrogance; while speaking she was playing with the whip and mercilessly mocking Su

Wan.

Chapter 047 – A tiger doesn't show its might so you treat me like a sick cat (3)

“You...,” Su Wan bit her trembling lips, after recovering some of her spirit; her eyes boiled with rage, full of disbelief, “ You dare to hit me!”

Su Luo very innocently shrugged with her hands spread. “How could this world have such a stupid person? Obviously you have been hit, but to still continue to ask, you actually hit me?”

Such a brazen insult, caused Su Wan's lungs to almost explode from anger. Her face trembled, and stressing each syllable through gritted teeth, she said: “ You—court—death! “

“The one courting death is you!” Su Luo took out the whip, and mercilessly whipped her body, lash by lash. Her eyes were shining with a brilliant light that could leave a person in a state of terror. “This whiplash is for the previous Su Luo! This whip is lashed for Lu Luo! This whip is lashed for the ants that were crushed to death by you....”

Su Luo's justifications was full of fantastic oddities of every description, but she could always find a reason to whip Su Wan. It's like at a wine table, people will always find a justification to force the other to drink until they become drunk.

In almost no time, Su Wan's body was covered with lash marks; her clothes had become ragged, worse than a beggar's.

“Su Luo! I will never let you off! Absolutely never!” Su Wan crawled up.

While hugging her exposed body, she urgently began to take steps to run out.

As she made her way, she staggered along. She fell down and then crawled up, crawled up and then fell down. She looked like a very sorry figure.

Watching Su Wan's figure from the back as she ran away, Su Luo's pupils manifested a sneaky, crafty grin.

“Miss, this, this is not good right?” Before, Su Luo would always act in the role of the bullied. Today however, it's reversed, with her whipping another. Lu Luo was not used to this type of change, so it was also a little terrifying.

“What's so bad about it? Bullying others is always better than being bullied.” Su Luo sat at the stone table set in the courtyard. And with a calm manner, unruffled in the midst of chaos, she poured herself a cup of tea.

“But, but this...” Lu Luo stammered as she said, “The third miss left to tattle to the master. What can we do?”

Wasn't the mistress afraid of the master before? In front of him, she would always be a yes-man, almost unable to speak a complete sentence; now however, it seem as if she is not even a little afraid?

“My cheap father, right now, won't be in a relaxed enough frame of mind to deal with other people's business. He has something keeping

him busy at the moment.” This matter was also something Su Luo found for him.

Besides, her father may be cheap and old, but he was also not stupid. In this world where the strong were respected, Su Wan was a first rank martial artist who couldn't even beat an ordinary person. Under these circumstances, what's the use of supporting this daughter? Wouldn't it just be a waste?

Her cheap,old father can calculate very well in regards to this matter. It was really unnecessary for her to worry about anything.

Sure enough, Su Wan, while covering her face full of whip wounds and weeping endlessly, ran to find the great Su general Su Zian. However, she encountered being given the cold shoulder that she had previously never before experienced.

Su Zian impatiently suppressed his temper and listened to Su Wan's tale of receiving unjust treatment. He exhaustedly rubbed between his eyebrows to relieve the stress, but, in the end, he was unable to tolerate any more; he settled it straightforwardly with one sentence, “ You are a first rank martial artist and unable to defeat a good for nothing, yet you still have the face to come here to cry?’

Su Wan was suddenly startled. She raised her small, crying face like the rain bearing pear blossoms. Face full of disbelief, she stuttered, “ Father....but this.....but this....she hit me....”

Su Zian was busy trying to catch the thief that stole the hidden treasure map, so how could he have the frame of mind to manage a struggle

between daughters of the family, “Okay, all right, Su Luo was really wrong in this matter, but you are wrong too. If there was no business, what were you doing in her courtyard?”

“Zi Wu!” Su Zian wearing a cold expression, thundered out a command.

From outside of the door a guard came in. He was Su Zian’s personal bodyguard.

Su Zian’s cold voice commanded. “Go tell Su Luo, that within the next three month, she will stay in her courtyard and not take a single step outside the door. If she takes one step outside of her courtyard then just break her leg. Let her reflect carefully in her courtyard!”

Chapter 048 – A tiger doesn't show its might so you treat me like a sick cat (4)

Zi Wu with a cold face, tersely agreed. His gaze landed upon Su Wan's face and a flash of astonishment shone from his eyes. Afterwards, with some disgust, he turned his face away and finally left following the command.

Isn't it merely solitary confinement? To let her go this lightly? This is absolutely inconceivable!

Su Wan was so angry that she almost cried. She shouted and crawled toward Su Zian and was even about to hug his thigh.

It was a pity that her face was smeared with blood coupled with tears, sweat, body clothed in rags. And when she had rolled around the floor before, it had become truly filthy. Her entire being looked no different from that of a malicious spirit.

Su Zian's eyes flashed with loathing.

This daughter is also a useless tool!

Only knowing how to stir up trouble, but never thinking of a way to help lessen his burdens!

A touch of anger flashed across Su Zian's heart as he recalled that, just a few days ago, this was the very same Su Wan who had heavily lost face

in front of the crown prince.

Although everyone outside said it was Su Luo, but as for the actual truth, as a father, how could he not know?

Su Zian turned his back on her by withdrawing his thigh and in a cold voice said. “You will also go back and stay in your yard for three month, carefully reflect upon yourself, study well from your fifth younger sister’s example!”

Isn’t this locking her in confinement? Su Wan’s expression was full of unwillingness and discontent.

And to also learn from Su Xi example? In this Su Manor, the most arrogant and willful person who still took rash actions, isn’t it actually Su Xi? Su Wan was so despondent that she almost spit out blood.

“Daddy...” Su Wan still desired to beseech him while weeping.

But Su Zian waved his hand. In a cold, furious voice, he said, “ Zi Xi! Drag the third Miss back to her courtyard and carefully watch her!”

Each and everyone of them won’t save me from worrying! Su Zian’s fist heavily smashed towards the table made from pear-tree wood. Immediately the deep imprint of a fist appeared on the table.

The veins on Su Zian’s forehead were beating, like his heart was jumping around.

Father is about to come out of closed-door practice, but the Celestial Spirit Water has completely disappeared; and also that piece of hidden treasure map. Where exactly could it be?!

Jingyu, that stinking brat. He won't confess even facing death, and from his mouth Su Zian was unable to obtain any useful information.

Su Zian was so vexed that his full head of black hair was almost all pulled out.

A thief in the family is really hard to guard against. It was a pity that Su Zian did not know, this thief from the family was not Su Jingyu, but was in fact the one whom he firmly believe to be a good-for-nothing fourth daughter.

Su Zi Wu with his cold, dark face walked into the courtyard and passed on the Su generals commands.

Su Luo sweetly and obediently demonstrated that she would properly stay in her courtyard to contemplate. Everyday she would appear to properly think things over, and learn from her fifth sister Su Xi.

Su Zi Wu slammed the door shut, then heavy locks were used to keep the door sealed.

Afterwards, even delivering her meal would be done by passing it over the wall.

“Miss... this... “Isn’t this punishment a little light? If it was the way it was in the past, the master would have definitely made people whip the mistress.

“I told you earlier, you don’t need to worry alright?” Su Luo gave off an appearance of a prophet with supernatural accuracy. She comfortably lay down on the soft couch, eating dessert in one hand and flipping through the book of the history of the continent in the other hand.

These days, Su Luo had flipped through all the books on the history of the continent, she also read some books about herbs.

After all, in the future her cultivation would have to include apothecary skills. Moreover she would soon enter Sunset Mountain Range. Based on the luck of her hands, she felt she would have extraordinary opportunities.

Lu Luo whose face was full of happiness took care of Su Luo. “Miss, these next few days we need to properly stay in the courtyard, so do not stir up trouble, okay?”

This time her father had given her a rather light punishment, though it was not known why. The next time, surely, it would not be so simple.

Who knew that Su Luo would toss the book into Lu Luo’s lap. With a gaze that was all smiles, she said to her “ This Miss officially informs you, Lu Luo girl, these three months, you will have a good stay in this courtyard and reflect in place of your mistress. When this Miss comes back, I will definitely bring you something good to eat.”

“Miss——” Lu Luo’s face was full of shock

However, Su Luo did not stop to clarify what she was going to do, and with a mysterious wave of her hand, she waved her away.

Chapter 049 – A strong and overbearing kiss (1)

When Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun decided on a meeting place, she obediently waited under a big tree on the outskirts of the town.

Not long after, clouds of dust rose, from far away, and one could hear the waves of sound coming from a beast's roar.

Su Luo looked ahead.

She saw a strangely shaped horse dragging an exquisite carriage and galloping towards her in a fast, vigorous manner. In a blink of an eye, it had arrived.

The gorgeous, extravagant carriage had the curtains surrounding it were cut from real silk and inlaid with an obscure red plum blossoms embroidery.

The carriage was made from pear tree wood, and its two walls were engraved with golden flowers. The gilding was inlaid with jade that were formed into, exquisite carvings along with other cut gems. From the top of the carriage rows of pink tassels, that surrounded the gig, dangled and spun around in the wind creating a gorgeous atmosphere

What made more people turn around was the white horse.

This was not just any insignificant, ordinary horse.

If one looked closely, it could be seen that his body was covered in greenish-blue scales, yet its body was still like that of a horse. It looked like an unusual divine spirit horse. Furthermore its running speed was faster than a Thousand Li Blood-Perspiring Treasure-Horse* by several folds.

Almost in a blink of an eye, it stood quietly not moving in front of Su Luo.

The greenish-blue scales on its body gleamed. Nodding its head and shaking its tail, the horse raised both hooves and whinnied toward the sky, giving off the appearance of a true divine spirit horse.

“Could this be a Dragon Scaled Horse?” Su Luo exclaimed in surprise.

These days she had been focused on studying the history and general knowledge of this continent, so she currently had some knowledge about common species.

“How could it not be?” Nangong Liuyun’s indulgent, devilish, charmingly-low voice carried a hint of laughter.

His sedan chair was obscured by a curtain of jade beads, but she could faintly see Nangong Liuyun gracefully reclined on the soft cushion inside the horse carriage. She could see that he was dressed entirely in a gorgeously flowing, soft robe made of golden silk threads. Its hem was curved like a warm cloud, twisting and turning, draped across the edge of the soft couch with layers folded upon layers. Even the flowing light dispelled all of the shadows and created a pretty flirtatious and compelling atmosphere.

Even for a moment, Su Luo found it hard to believe her own eyes.

According to her knowledge, the Dragon Scaled Horse was a type of demon beast, with extraordinary strength. Even the most ordinary, run of the mill Dragon Scaled Horse's strength was equivalent to a person of fifth ranked martial artist.

What kind of strength was someone of a fifth rank? Take for example, Su Xi. This little genius was still only at the second rank. Su Jingyu is merely at the third rank, and, as for the grand general that protects the country, Su Zian, he had not even passed the fifth rank.

Just with this single small Dragon Scaled Horse, one could be compared to an important general that protects the country. Among all the powerful people, only Nangong Liuyun had this horse in the entire Eastern Ling Empire! Nobody else had one, ah.

Not only that, he did not raise this Dragon Scaled Horse as a battle companion but instead used it as he wished to draw a carriage.

Its use was extremely extravagant. He was indeed deserving of being called his legendary highness, Prince Jin.

“Come here.” Nangong Liuyun beckoned with his slender, pale-white fingers from within the carriage. a hypnotic smile as intoxicating as blooming cherry blossoms in March, appeared on his face.

His words were unhurried and careless but held a kind of strength that

couldn't be ignored.

Su Luo, who wanted to test the speed of a Dragon Scaled Horse, voluntarily lifted the jade bead curtain and sat inside.

Compared to the carriage's gorgeous extravagant exterior, the interior space was much more delicate, beautifully detailed, and refined.

The interior wall was inlaid with all kinds of gemstones:, amber, pearl, and high quality crystals that were priceless and unique. These gems emitted a faint luster, which generated the excess light that sweep away the haze and blur of any shadows.

“ Such an extravagant carriage room. You must have milked many people dry of their blood, sweat and tears. Am I right?” Su Luo while admiring the luxurious carriage interior, clicked her tongue in wonder.

Nangong Liuyun's face was like the full moon of Mid-Autumn , pure white and sleekly smooth, were accentuated by a pair of beautiful eyes like resplendent obsidian jade. He muffled a light laugh, “ what about it? Are you going to play the part of the righteous heroine that comes to the aid of those suffering injustice?”

“I don't have that much spare time.” Su Luo waved her hands. She sat and, doing as she pleased, picked up the white jade teapot and gracefully poured herself a cup of fragrant tea. As she finished pouring she gave praise, “as expected of his highness, Prince Jin. you really know how to live life to the fullest. Sitting in the most ostentatious horse carriage; drinking the most concentrated and fragrant green tea.”

“Also discovering the most obstinate woman.” Nangong Liuyun’s lanky arms went fishing, and completely lacking any warning sign, Su Luo had already fallen into his embrace.

**Thousand Li Blood-Perspiring Treasure-Horse: A special type of normal horse raised with parasites in them. The horse runs very fast due to the parasite; they will also sweat blood around their neck thus, getting their name sake. (Chinese Li = $\frac{1}{3}$ of a mile)*

Chapter 050 – A strong and overbearing kiss (2)

Nangong Liuyun lowered his head. His handsome face, like white jade with exquisite luster, was slowly getting closer... centimeter by centimeter. He sensually puffed warm air near her sensitive earlobes

“Nangong Liuyun!” Su Luo tried to push him away with one shove.

But Nangong Liuyun’s hands were strong and powerful. His long arms tightly imprisoned Su Luo near his chest. His palm touched Su Luo’s pink tender cheek, and his thumb gently caressing her lips; like a lipstick gentle and smooth, meticulously contouring the shape of her lips.

Su Luo opened her eyes wide. She wanted to resist, but she soon discovered that she was helpless in his grasp.

Suddenly....

Nangong Liuyun’s palms appeared on the back of her head, locked itself there, and heavily seized her petal-soft lips.

His tongue was hot and soft, but also seemed to contain a formidable strength. It sharply entered to explore the inside of her mouth and closely chased after her tongue.

Earnest yet persistent.

He closed his black as ink eyes and stood fast, as he evenly drank in her sweet flavor.

Since the beginning, she had been resisting. Even under such overwhelming assault, she still passionately resisted.

But he secured her hands behind her back. The back of her head was once again powerfully in his grasp, and her entire body become weak and limp, unable to move a single step.

This kiss was full of burning lust and strongly felt of honeyed desires.

Perhaps it was due to a body's instinctive chemical response; or maybe it was because of his superb skill. Whatever the cause, slowly, her stiff body started to soften, and steadily began to harmonize with Nangong Liuyun's forceful, wantonly plundering kiss.

Currently, Su Luo's brain activity had flat lined.

The past betrayal she experienced in the other world... the pain that tore her heart and split her lungs...she couldn't think of anything. All rational thoughts had fled, and her body slavishly listened to the commanding kiss and feedback this signal to her brain.

After what seemed like an eternity..... their lips parted. The corner of his mouth held a sliver of white, silken thread. Giving off a coarse and wildly erotic appearance.

All along, Nangong Liuyun's vision was locked onto Su Lu. It was hard

to read anything from the midst of his beautiful eyes. However, they seemed to still hold remnants of passion.

Su Luo's fair and delicate face, without any warning, had become red.

Her subconscious mind wanted to push him away. Nangong Liuyun, however, suddenly gave off a wicked laugh.

Once again, his lips, like swan feathers, gently played across her cheeks, her earlobes, her eyes....

Both of Nangong Liuyun's lips resembled a blazing ball of fire, wantonly setting everywhere aflame. Where ever he kissed, a fervent blaze, that could scorch anything it touched, would spread there.

Su Luo's temperature increased little by little until it finally engulfed her entire body. Su Luo suddenly felt as if she had been set on fire.....

Memories from her previous life came back thick and fast. On top of the cliff, that impossibly hard to forget sense of betrayal rushed forth like the tide....

A sense of panic suddenly flashed across Su Luo's heart. Subconsciously, she abruptly used all her strength to push Nangong Liuyun away--

Nangong Liuyun, who was immersed in the passion and desire, was completely taken aback. He did not expect Su Luo would take such an action, so, without the slightest bit of guard, he heavily fell backwards....

“Bang....” a loud sound echoed, as the back of Nangong Liuyun’s head knocked against the hard interior wall, producing an echoing sound that was sharp and clear.

The surrounding area become very quiet all of a sudden. The air was saturated with a feeling of awkwardness.

Nangong Liuyun’s expression was covered with haze, like tranquility before a tempest. His pair of eyes, black and deep as ink, seemed cold and overcast with a somewhat scary, deadly look. These eyes locked onto Su Luo, and his handsome appearance condensed into a thick layer of frost.

Su Luo was dumbfounded. She unconsciously covered her red lips, wanting to laugh but afraid to laugh. Within her there was not only embarrassment but also a thread of regret

How could she have known that this strong and overbearing man was so frail, with one push he would fall?

“That uhhh....Are you okay?”

Su Luo saw him firmly glaring at her. He seemed to want to stare until he reached the bottom of her heart. This made her become apprehensive. She could only feebly stand by her question.

Her response was Nangong Liuyun’s silence and that pair of cold black and fierce eyes.

Su Luo slowly moved closer to him, and somewhat awkwardly, scratched her head. She even shook his sleeves with a hint of embarrassment. Being at a loss, she continued to ask, "...Does it hurt?"

It should have been very painful, right? Just now, the sound from the impact was so severe that it could scare people.

Nangong Liuyun's deep dark eyes were cold and remote, and moodily measuring and watching her he replied. "Want to give it a try?"

Chapter 51 – A strong and overbearing kiss (3)

“No, it’s okay.” Su Luo saw although his face was gloomy, the depths of his eyes held a childish feeling of being thwarted. She couldn’t help but think it was ridiculous. She slid a few steps back to be far from where he sat.

“Come here—,” said Nangong Liuyun with one hand supporting the back of his head. The other lush and jade-like hand beckoned towards Su Luo.

But the gaze he fixed upon Su Luo was with his deep enchanting and boundless pupils. His light, phoenix-like gaze narrowed. It seemed to hold a touch of laughter inside of it. From its disappearing, beautiful nature their hidden depth revealed an insufferably arrogant and noble haughtiness.

That effortless exuded the highest quality of a tyrannical king. It was a gaze that, just by seeing it, people would find it hard to defy such elegance and charm that resemble nature itself.

Su Luo perceptively shook her head.

She was not a fool. If she went over now, then wasn’t it voluntarily delivering herself to his door for him to ravage? Of course she didn’t want that!

However, Nangong Liuyun’s beautiful, elegantly thin, rosy-pink, lips started to rise His mouth suddenly issued out a whistling sound. It was a

crisp whistle that was loud and resounding.

Suddenly, the Dragon Scaled Horse galloping at lighting speed, by scattering open its four hoofs, abruptly raised up both front hoofs. It followed up with a mighty whine.

However because of the stop, the horse carriage suddenly began to twist, and, not in the least bit on-guard, Su Luo got violently thrown back

Without the time to react, she had again fallen back into Nangong Liuyun's embrace.

Before she could sit back up, Nangong Liuyun's slender, powerful hands dared to clamp like steel around Su Luo's wrist. His enchanting and devilishly sly lips turned upwards, carrying a trace of arrogance and haute.

His pair of dark, obsidian-like eyes, shone luminously and firmly locked onto Su Luo's face. The corner of his mouth raised into a wicked laugh. Such a laugh made Su Luo somewhat scared within the depths of her heart.

"You, what are you doing!" Su Luo unconsciously hugged her plump, well-endowed bosoms. Her stammering tone betrayed her guilty conscience.

"You said you won't come over. Yet didn't you just take the initiative to deliver yourself into my arms?" His eyes contained an evil and stern

smiling expression.

“Obviously this is due to the fact that you cheated!” Su Luo bitterly threw him a glance.

He and his Dragon Scaled Horse had conspired to set her up . So instead of distancing herself, she could have been said to have thrown herself into his arms. It really was truly preposterous!

“So what?” Nangong Liuyun’s smile was really infuriating His eyes turned into peach blossom as they started to shine brightly, “If you have the ability you can also go and catch such a horse. Ah, but right now you should be compensating this king for his time.”

“What do you want?” Su Luo felt she was extremely unlucky at this point.

Nangong Liuyun supported his forehead with one hand, and allowed his soft fine black hair to flow down swiftly. He really did carry such a devilish charm that despite acting wild and rash, it was making him out to be the ultimate lure.

He unhurriedly spoke with a deep and alluring voice. His beautiful, dark eyes resembled a sinister pit of darkness and profoundly mysterious that did not allow people to see into his thoughts.

“How about serving this king.” The corner of Nangong Liuyun’s dark eyebrows raised slightly. As he glanced around: inside of his eyes flashed prettily and flirtatiously, with a touching smile.

Nangong Liuyun's pair of snow-white hands gracefully swirled the wine cup made of jade celadon. While taking a light sip from time to time, his appearance was happy and content.

"How do you want to be served?" Su Luo expressed that she completely did not know.

Nangong Liuyun with a joyful expression shot her a quick glance. His entire body leaned on top of the soft cushion, giving off an lazy impression. From his long and narrow elegant almond-shaped eyes emerges a smiling expression. "What do you think?"

Su Luo thought about it, picked up the white jade wine jar, artfully poured a cup of wine, and handed it to Nangong Liuyun. "Once you drink this cup of wine, with one stroke we'll write off what happened in the past! Come, let's drink."

Nangong Liuyun, unable to take his eyes off Su Luo, used his beautiful eyes suspiciously to size her up. Suddenly, his mouth formed into an extremely charming, devilish smile, and using Su Luo's hands, his red lips inhaled the amber colored grape wine in one mouthful.

But, his pair of gloomy deep eyes were always burningly fixed on Su Luo.

The corner of his mouth was perfectly curved, and a scarlet drop of wine rolled down it. This gave off a pretty and flirtatious charm but also cold and blood-thirsty.

Being watched attentively by such a wild and coarse wolf-like stare, Su Luo's heart secretly shouted to herself, "not good!" She turned around wishing to retreat, but who would have known that Nangong Liuyun already single-handedly clasped onto the back of her head, immobilizing her body. After that, a dense shadow came to envelope her.

Chapter 52 – A strong and overbearing kiss (4)

His arms were stronger than a steel clamp. They firmly imprisoned Su Luo, and under their command she was unable to budge

“Let go....wuhhh....,” Su Luo just opened her mouth when a full-bodied strong alcoholic drink was forcefully poured into her mouth.

The bright-red grape wine was following the corner of her mouth, and drop by drop, it tumbled down.

Nangong Liuyun’s appearance, from head to toe, emitted a majestic and imposing manner. No matter how much force Su Luo employed, he still had not moved a whisker’s width.

Su Luo’s struggle in front of him was as negligible as dust.

The feverish kiss was earth-shattering strong and overbearing.

Su Luo’s mind became an area of blank space, and in a split second, she almost lost herself.

Forcing Su Luo to swallow that mouthful of red wine, Nangong Liuyun intimately closed in. He tenderly touched the edge of her lips and wandered there, lingering.

The soft kiss was as if a feather was caressing along her mouth.

The tip of his tongue's scorching heat burned her, and removed any resistance to the red-colored drops of wine at the corner of her mouth being sucked clean.

Both of their extremely beautiful faces were almost within reach; close enough to feel one another's scorching, hot breath.

All around them, there was nothing but quiet and silence.

The only thing that could be heard was the Dragon Scaled Horse's rapidly running gallup that gave rise to a biting, cold sound of the wind.

Nangong Liuyun tenderly cupped the palm sized small face in front of his eyes, scrutinizing every delicate detail, with his obsidian eyes radiating a fascinated expression while leaving behind a strong sense of passion.

This kind of passion and intimacy made Su Luo feel very uncomfortable. It made her involuntarily think about the betrayal in her previous incarnation.

Su Luo clearly and coldly turned her head, suppressing the severe waves of nausea in the pit of her stomach. Little by little she adjusted to the extreme ****

Nangong Liuyun, however, did not let her go. A pale, moist finger detained her bright, clean, and tapered lower jaw. His voice carried unprecedented seriousness, stressing each syllable to asked, " Am I that

loathsome?”

His gaze from the beginning was firmly locked upon her face. As a result, he couldn't have missed the disgust that flitted around inside of her eyes and her feeling of distress, just a moment ago.

Abruptly the mood dropped until it had reached the freezing point.

Su Luo slowly pushed him away. Her gaze went through the window curtains that had been tossed aside...Looking towards the distant and remote sky.

“I'll ask again, am I really that loathsome,” Nangong Liuyun asked persistently from behind her back.

Was he loathsome? Su Luo asked herself honestly. Ever since waking up in this world, Nangong Liuyun's assistance toward her has been an undoubtedly enormous boon.. Although he sometimes liked to 'raise and lower his hand'*, towards her, there was never any malice.

But, how could she tell him about that matter from her previously life.

That matter, that person, she really doesn't want to mention it.

A trace of sadness, difficult to perceive, emerged from Su Luo's dimly lit eyes as she said, “My broken heart has nothing to do with you, so don't ask anymore.”

She did not expect that this sentence would act like a fuse, as all of a sudden, it had ignited Nangong Liuyun's fury.

He pulled Su Luo in one grasp, an action that was rude and unreasonable, seized her chin, and let her look at him face to face. He very fiercely interrogated, "If your broken heart had nothing to do with me, then who was it related to?"

A moment ago, as the sadness that flitted by her eyes, he seemed to understand but also not understand. But what he was confident of was, that those words to Nangong Liuyun, definitely was not a good thing.

Su Luo's certainty and air of arrogance was aroused. Her stare obstinately forged ahead, "Nangong Liuyun, who are you to me? Isn't your control rather too wide?"

Nangong Liuyun smiled instead of being angry. a pair of beautiful, star-like eyes were cold as ice. As he resumed detaining her lower jaw, he stressed each syllable, making a vow. " You are this king's wife. This point will never change!"

"Did I agree to this?" Su Luo's thin eyebrows had been incited, and her eyes held a shallow, mocking smile.

Su Luo's long hair fluttered in the wind. Her face faintly smiled. Her meaningful glance lacked both stormy waves and swelling water. Neither joyful nor sad, the depths of her eyes hid a horrifying expression.

Nangong Liuyun stared blankly, as he became stumped for words. After

just a moment, a mysteriously cold look emerged from its serene and hidden depth. A resplendently light smile appeared from a pair of brilliant red fulsome lips, which emitted a gem like luster. The corner of his mouth hooked up into devilish flattery. He emphatically and self-confidently said, “You, Su Luo this lifetime must be mine, Nangong Liuyun’s wife!”

A pair of glittering obsidian eyes, flashed an expression. That disdainfully look at all living things, revealed a regality, insufferable arrogance and overbearing haughtiness.

“Let’s wait and see. Walking to the end of this road, what the final result will be.” Su Luo’s pink lips rose up a little.

***** Author left out a word? Found it like this online—June
‘raise and lower his hand’ – an idiom meaning conspiring to defraud*

Chapter 53 – To save people from calamity (1)

The Dragon Scaled Horse was really worthy of its accolades. The entire way it traveled at lightning speed, so what originally would have been a ten day journey, unexpectedly ended when they arrived within two days instead.

The Sunset Mountain Range was the Eastern Ling Empire's largest forest containing magical beasts. It was located in the northwest part of Eastern Ling Empire, and covered an area approximately as large as the size of a province.

Inside the forest, trees have undergone countless years of nourishment. These ancient trees were not only lush and flourishing, they also reached high into the sky. The magical beasts roamed this land, without fear, and people without martial art skills would not dare to enter inside.

But the Sunset Mountain Range's arteries were not completely devoid of life. Inevitably there were martial artists who went inside. Perhaps to learn through experience and cultivate, or maybe even to hunt magical beast or to forage for medicinal herbs.

The extravagantly gorgeous horse carriage slowly came to a halt. Stopping at a small village on the northern edge of the Sunset Mountain Range called Bridgehead village.

Normally people who wanted to enter the Sunset Mountain Range would rest for a night in Bridgehead village. Here they could replenish and prepare the supplies necessary to enter Sunset Mountain Range.

“Eat more green vegetables, because once we go in, there will only be roasted meat .” In a private room, Nangong Liuyun’s chopstick picked up slices of chicken and placed it in Su Luo’s bowl. Inside his eyes, they were nearly overflowing with a dazzling smile.

The argument from two days ago, as far as he was concerned, already seemed like a puff of wind. Once it had been blown then it was gone like a puff of smoke. After the events of that day, he quickly returned to acting the way he was before, scheming about the hunting trip, such that Su Luo could not lift her face.

Su Luo glanced at him and said, “ you should also eat.”

“If you get it for me, then I will eat it.” Nangong Liuyun leaned close to her, with a shameless smile on his face.

However in that very moment, a noisy scuffling sound came through from the outside. Among the noise was also accompanied along with the yells and cryings of a little girl, who seem to have lost her head out of fear.

Su Luo looked down from the open window.

At that time a dispute was breaking out on the first floor lobby.

One could only see a thirteen to fourteen year old girl really crying miserably. And at her side, her white-bearded grandfather had just been grabbed by the collar and hoisted high into the air.

“You guys let go of my grandpa. You guys quickly release my grandpa. Grandpa will quickly be strangled to death by you guys...waaaa...” The little girl was crying so hard that she almost was unable to breath.

Yet the person choking her old grandpa was a wealthy young noble. Though his entire body clothed in splendid brocade garment, it was a pity he had been born a sharp beak and monkey cheeks on his face.

He dragged on the final sound of a syllable, and leisurely sneered. With a face that held a very ferocious appearance, “Dead old man, you see clearly right? Our plate of food has a fly in it. Come now, tell me, how will you deal with this?”

That elderly man being strangled was already around 70 to 80 years old. His hair white as frost, and he had a face full of wrinkles. With his eyelids drooping, his answer did not come quickly.

Misery filling his eyes, he trembled, swayed, while he entreated the man, “ My lords, our inn is always clean, how could we have flies? This... this surely was a mistake somewhere.”

“ A mistake? Is this not a fly? Speak you! How are you going to deal with this?” That wealthy young noble, with one foot on top of the bench was still grasping the old man’s collar with one hand.

Behind him was a row of hired thugs, each and every one of them with a dragon’s vitality and a tiger’s ferociousness. Their gazes opened wide as a circle. They were extremely formidable. So much so that they gave off a powerfully deterring aura.

“These dishes....just regard it as this little old man’s gifts to all of you, free of charge. What do you think?” The old man’s face had an unspeakable sadness.

“Gifted to me free of charge? What do you mean? Is this not acting as if we are freeloading?” That wealthy young noble was very dissatisfied. “You see clearly it’s your house’s dish that has a fly! Ah, See? Did you see it?”

He lifted the elderly man’s head and pressed it down onto the table, almost burying his entire face into the dish full of food.

Misery filling the elder man’s eyes. “Yes, yes, yes, you lords say how it should be handled, and it will be done in that way...”

The frequent sound of the wealthy young noble’s cold laughter could be heard as it resounded. “You know, this is not because we deliberately extorted you. It’s because your food had a problem. So, upon seeing that you provide 50 tael* of silver, then this matter will end from this point on.”

“50 taels?” An expression of such shock flashed across the elderly man’s entire face that it was almost hard to believe.

**1 tael = 50 grams (very heavy)*

Chapter 54 – To save people from calamity (2)

“What? Can’t pay out for that amount?” The wealthy young noble laughed maliciously while casting sidelong glances at the old man.

The elderly man grimaced in response.” Young master Zhao, I beseech you. Please be magnanimous ah... Even if you were to sell both grandparent and grandchild, I still wouldn’t have 50 taels.”

“Don’t have it? Hey, hey.” That young master Zhao began to make a groping motion towards the girl’s face, “This girl looks pretty good. White and tender soft. Hmmm... after growing up a little more she will probably be an incredible beauty. Well, since this is the case, then just let this girl stand in for the 50 tael. Seeing that you are so poor, we’ll just let it pass and take a little loss.”

Young master Zhao was clearly taking convenient advantage of the situation, and yet, in speech, he still tried to flaunt how well-behaved he was. He nauseatingly emphasized his own charitable kindness.

Su Luo’s gaze become cold. Seeing the elderly man’s expression and the surrounding people’s reactions, this young master Zhao must be the number-one, local tyrant. There must have been a frighteningly powerful man behind him.

Su Luo’s thin eyebrows wrinkled. However she did not plan to take action and come to their aid at this time.

At this moment, from the corner of the lobby, a loud shout suddenly

rang out. The sound of a lovable voice seemed to arise throughout the floor.

“You guys are these shameless and disrespectful to the elderly. All you do is specialize in bullying and humiliating the small and weak. Forcefully snatching woman from ordinary families. You are all truly extremely vile!” In the wake of the young master’s exploits, the voice barley just dropped in like a splash of cold water. A slender silhouette stood up from its seat and came out. A young lady, in the prime of her youth, was holding the shaft of a flexible double-edged sword in her hand. The sword blade glittered like frost and snow, issuing cold, austere energy.

This young lady was about fifteen to sixteen years old. Her upper body covered in blue with green jade and a smoky colored jacket with open slits. The bottom was a light-blue, pleated skirt patterned with flowery water and mist.

The skin on her small face was like a clear, crystalized amber. The snow-white complexion revealed a trace of pink still carrying a little baby fat. It was offset by a pair of a large, pea-sized dimples, a refreshingly clean look that was capable of charming any person it was directed at.

On the table behind her, sat five to six young men and young ladies of the same age. They gave off an image of an organized group from a school that was sent out to learn from experience.

Moreover, Su Luo felt that the young lady in front of her eyes seemed a bit familiar. Her surname should be Liu.

She appeared to have played very well with Su Xi. Before with Su Xi she had even acted jointly to cause her harm.

Su Luo, with one hand supporting her chin, was full of interest, as she watched the development of the play below. She actually didn't expect that Miss Liu, with the same character as Su Xi, could be so willing to perform such a good show as to save a person.

This, after all...what reason could there be for this?

Young master Zhao stroking his lower jaw and full of interest, began sizing up the young lady in front of his eyes. "Oi, little beauty, are you demanding to throw yourself into my arms?"

"Shameless!" Miss Liu shouted, and with one thrust of her long double-edged sword she whooshed over.

Miss Liu gracefully displayed her long, double-edged sword dance naturally, causing it to glitter like frost and snow. The sword thrusts appeared like blooming flowers in all directions with a vigorous and strength-born presence. This aura seemed to be teeming with the desire to kill.

Young master Zhao's originally teasing expression very quickly became motionless. A serious expression began to appear on his face. The two people intertwined to fight, unable to distinguish who's better.

Even though downstairs was bustling with noise and excitement, Nangong Liuyun's gaze had, since the beginning, always been locked

onto Su Luo. Smiling and tweeting like he was singing a song, “You see? now the limelight was snatched by someone else.”

He could see Su Luo’s sympathy towards that granddaughter, and this was the reason why his comment carried a teasing air to it.

“Nangong Liuyun, in your eyes, am I just an idiot?” Su Luo exasperatedly rolled her eyes.

“Whatever do you mean?” Nangong Liuyun’s pair of bright, resplendent diamond-like eyes were fixed on Su Luo.

“That young master Zhao... With one look you could already determine that he was the local gang leader. That Miss Liu may be able to save them once, but what about a second time or a third time? She can not protect them, once she leaves. So, when she does leave, those thugs will bring more people to tear down this restaurant. This is not called rescuing people but to bring them more harm.

Su Luo’s beautiful eyes roamed around, with an indifferent expression, the corner of her mouth hooked into a distinct cold arc, like the splendidly gorgeous firework fading faintly into nothingness.

Pausing a bit, she once again sneered. “Besides, even more so, when looking at her current status; it would be pretty good, if she end up not inviting more trouble for that pair of kinsfolk.

Nangong Liuyun humorously watched Su Luo, and an expression full of appreciation flashed across the depth of his eyes.

His Luo girl definitely does not know that her manner of speaking, frankly and with assurance, was so radiant it illuminated her entire persons with a colorfully splendid light.

Also only with such a clever mind as hers, could at the moment of rescuing someone, thoughtfully consider the entire situation. Only then will a person truly succeed in helping another in solving their trouble, rather than bring about a more difficult problem.

Chapter 55 – To save people from calamity (3)

While the conversation between the two was still in progress, below them, the situation had suddenly reversed——

Because Miss Liu was beginning to see that her attacks had been going on for a long time without success, as well as the fact that young master Zhao keep adding oil to her fire: her fury reached a peak. Her other hand successfully completed the motion of drawing an arc in the air, and together a rain of arrows, hiding the sky and covering the earth, attacked toward the body of young master Zhao.

Quite clearly, this Miss Liu was not only a martial artist but also a water element mage.

Due to the nature of the intense close-quarters combat, young master Zhao still hadn't set up any defenses. An ominous woosh of the wind sounded, as no less than seven water arrows, similar to sharp swords, pierced every part of young master Zhao's body.

Young master Zhao had an incredulous expression on his face. When he had toppled to the ground, he died while refusing to close his eyes*.

Miss Liu joyfully threw a glance in the direction of the second floor, and afterwards with a conceited manner, she walked away and returned to her team members.

“Young master!”

The row of bodyguards behind young master Zhao had just seen their own young master killed, so each and everyone of their eyes were bloodshot from rage. Baring their teeth, they truly wished to split in their enemy's eyes and pop their veins until it exploded with their own two hands.

All of them did not give any regards to their lives and threw themselves toward the young Miss Liu. Having pledged with their lives to eviscerate her with their machetes, they attacked with the hope of avenge their own young master!

However, the schoolmates in Miss Liu's company were not vegetables. They were all brilliant students from the best Imperial Mage school. They could all hold the title of legendary geniuses.

Consequently, a battle royal was about to unfold .

The restaurant's owner, was that pair of grandfather and grandchild. Their eyes were full of alarm mixed with despair, when they saw young master Zhao go down.

At this time, the restaurant's door had already been closed by someone. When the patrons in the lobby saw the situation was going to run amok, at any second; as fast as they could, each and everyone of them run upstairs.

They all gathered at the entrance of the staircase on the second floor. Those few who knew about young master Zhao's background, felt they had really encountered calamity and expressed mutual faces of those who were truly out of luck.

But not everyone knew about young master Zhao's background, so among them, one piped up and asked.

A middle-aged fellow's face, who knew the truth about young master Zhao, forced out a bitter laugh. "Because of this situation, we can only be considered to have thoroughly encountered bad luck. You outsiders wouldn't know. Young master Zhao was the local provincial governing official's son. His only son. We never thought he would die this way."

A person interrupted saying, "his merely a senior provincial official's son. What's so amazing about that?"

In Eastern Ling Empire, if all of the senior provincial officers were added together one would find there were no fewer than 20 or 30 of them.

The middle-aged fellow continued to laugh bitterly. "This place is a small town on the edge of an artery of Sunset Mountain Range. Someone who is the senior provincial officer here, how could he be an ordinary useless official, who would normally only be fit for gorging and boozing? This honorable senior provincial official's martial art ability is deep and unmeasurable. It's said that he is at least above the fifth step! "

"Fifth step...."

The bystanders immediately become mutes.

Fifth step... how many fifth step expert could be found in the entire

Eastern Ling Empire? Even the great general that protects this country, the Su general, is only at the fifth step.

“Ai, that young lady is also really...!!! If you’re going to save people, then just save them! Why did she also have to go and kill young master Zhao?!?”

“If this type of scum in the community is not to be killed, could it be that you wanted to leave him alive to continue to endanger other fellow villagers?”

“Then you could have still killed him in secret. Right now, the old uncle and his granddaughter is implicated in this debacle, and Zhao Official also likes to cover up for his son. This begs the questions of how those two kinsfolk could live day to day in the future, ah? Is this really saving them or harming them?”

“That’s exactly it. That young lady looks so beautiful and smart. How could she act so impulsively? She and her companions, however, are better off. When the time comes they can slip away and leave the town. But then again, what can those two kinsfolk live on?”

However, at this time, the two kinsfolk that everyone was talking about were crying on each other’s shoulders, with faces full of suffering and despair.

Su Luo’s eyes were pure ice, faintly breathed out a sigh. “Me and my big crow’s beak*, all that I said has hit the mark....”

Nangong Liuyun rubbed her head, a pair of deep beautiful eyes lazily watching the people below fighting as if their lives depends on it. Turned back his line of sight and narrowing his light phoenix eyes, a satisfied smiling expression began to creep over his entire face. “My Luo girl is always so smart. Now, how’s it going to be dealt with?”

**he died while refusing to close his eyes – figuratively saying he died with grievances.*

**crow’s beak – figuratively saying a person who has made an inauspicious remark.*

Chapter 56 – To save people from calamity (4)

“What do you mean, ‘how’s it going to be dealt with’?” Su Luo tilted up her fair, delicate, small, palm sized face and her pair of beautiful, vivid, moving eyes.

“Not easy to deceive, eh,” Nangong Liuyun’s slim, white, glossy forefinger curled toward her exquisite nose.

If it were concerning other women, he, Nangong Liuyun, just had to know how many women he wanted, and he would get that many. With a simply motion of his fingers, he could have countless young ladies voluntarily delivering themselves to his door. Only this girl, without exception, would not be taken in by his deception.

But this way was even better, as it further aroused his determination to chase after her. He must get her.

Su Luo irritatedly threw him a glance.

Honestly speaking, Nangong Liuyun had an extraordinarily beautiful and youthful appearance.

A pitch-black and profound set of pretty, arrogant eyes. He had bright eyes and white teeth, one distinctly light, thin pair of lips, which seemed as if they were plumped from the taste of cinnabar. There was also his highest quality of languid, devilish charm. He had a seemingly unsurpassed grace and bearing, priceless beauty, and was both leisurely and romantic.

“Then carefully watch the play, and don’t let your mind randomly wander off.” Su Luo with a somewhat reluctant expression shot him a cold stare. She then turned her face away from him, thus she did not see the wry smile that flashed through the depths of his eyes .

At this point in time, the fight in the lobby had long gone past its climax. And only now, it had come to an end.

Those people who chose to become bodyguards, generally did not have a high level of martial arts skill, so this very fight had already been predetermined to be Zhao family’s defeat.

Even though they had many men and great strength when swarming with these numbers, but how can they hope to last against these little geniuses from the Imperial school: that had come out to improve through experience?

Very quickly, the bodyguards from Zhao family had all been decapitated. One could call them so dead that they could never die again.

At this time, the blood flowed through the lobby like a river, from the mess of about a dozen fallen corpse. The tragic sight was simply a spectacle too horrible to endure.

Miss Liu ran over, pulled up the pair of kinsfolk that were crying so hard that they could no longer stand on their own. Wearing an excited expression, she said. “ Rest assured, in the future nobody will dare to bully you guys! Quickly, stop kneeling and stand up. Get up!”

Miss Liu on one side believed she had conferred her kindness to these people; and on the other side, her meaningful gaze had not forgotten to aim itself towards the second floor where Su Luo was.

Her expression was noticed by Su Luo right away, but Su Luo did not say anything. She only used the corner of her eyes to glance at Nangong Liuyun.

Looks like it's another disaster that will come out because of this evildoer Nangong Liuyun.

It went without saying, sometimes the accuracy of a woman's intuition was really scary.

Miss Liu saw the two kinsfolk from before, blankly kneeling in the original place with a numb expression. She can't help stomping her foot! "I told you not to keep kneeling. Rooting out the strong to give people peace is the duty of us martial artist. You guys don't have to be so grateful towards me."

"Pah——" Su Luo could not hold back any longer, as she had almost spitting out a mouthful of water.

It turned out, this Miss Liu actually thought that those people kneeling and refusing to get up were because they were too grateful for her actions. However, they really didn't know of a good way to tell her the truth.

"Who?" Miss Liu's ears were sharp, and hearing the sound of ridicule,

thump, thump, thump, she ran up. Her eyes directly locked onto Su Luo. “Was it you, before, who was laughing at me?”

However, by the time she saw Su Luo’s face, her eyes opened really wide, as if extremely shocked.

“You, you are....” Miss Liu simply could not believe it.

“Do I know you?” Su Luo innocently blinked her eyes. Her clear and attractively beautiful eyes seemed to show traces of being perplexed.

Miss Liu seeing the Su Luo in front of her eyes, only saw swathes of three che* length white misty muslin gown tailing on the floor, and her face without a touch of cosmetics. Frankly, even by adding cosmetics, one would still be unable to cover up her absolutely stunning complexion, which was like an otherworldly fairy floating on top of the earth.

No, not possible.

This person was definitely not Su Xi’s good-for-nothing fourth elder sister. It must be a person that resembles her. Besides just based off on that idiot Su Luo, how could she have the qualifications to sit by the side of his highness Prince Jin?

That’s right, in fact when Miss Liu saw the Dragon Scaled Horse outside the doorway, she already recognized his highness Prince Jin who was perfect beyond compare. It was actually the case, that in order to give his highness Prince Jin an ideal impression, she had quite uncharacteristically acted to help that pair of kinsfolk.

She believed, that this kindness from her will definitely grow into a favorable impression in his highness Prince Jin's heart. Afterwards....she would have pretended as if she accidentally encountered his highness Prince Jin. She believes she can only rely on this method to get close to the male god of her heart.

Also as a result, when Su Luo let out a derisive laugh; she was able to seize the opportunity, directly dashing to arrive on the second floor.

**the word for Chinese foot is equivalent to $\frac{1}{3}$ of a meter*

Chapter 57 – Coldly arrogant, distinctively remote, with an indomitable air that terrorized all

Miss Liu had already pushed Su Luo to the side, her small, bright, and beautiful face exuded rays of light like the luster of gems. She somewhat bashfully stared at Nangong Liuyun. “Prince Jin, is your highness also going to the Sunset Mountain Range?”

Nangong Liuyun was clothed in a azure brocade robe with the wings of golden serpents embroidered on its cloth. His pair of long, slender, white hands gracefully swirled the wine cup made of jade. From time to time, he would take a sip, with a happy and content demeanor; it was almost as if Miss Liu did not even exist in front of his eyes.

Even when Liu Ruohua saw Nangong Liuyun’s icy expression and dismissive manner, she was still not discouraged, she hurried said, “Prince Jin, your, your highness doesn’t remember me? I am Ruohua ah, Liu Ruohua. That time at the Imperial Mage school, your highness gave me pointers on how to cultivate”

Nangong Liuyun’s phoenix-like eyes narrowed and swept her a slight glance. Although he was smiling, the depth of his matchless eyes seem to be indifferent. After quite a while an icy voice delivered, “Are you finished speaking?”

Liu Ruohua nervously nodded her head, and prudently observed Nangong Liuyun’s expression.

According to Su Xi’s remarks, Prince Jin was the Nine Pagoda Palace’s celestial being. Even looking at him once was blasphemy. Now that she

could stand, face to face in front of him, Liu Rouhua felt extremely nervous. Her heart felt like it was about to jump out of her throat.

The corners of Nangong Liuyun's mouth curved up. His eyes were obviously laughing, but their pupils were ice-cold and indifferent. With a trace of impatience in his tone, "then scram."

He stingily did not provide her with any superfluous word.

Liu Ruohua's face immediately turned red. She was floundering as she stood there, not knowing what to do.

This was such a rare opportunity to get close to his highness, Prince Jin. How could she so easily let it go? By the next time they meet, who knows if there will be such a chance?

Liu Ruohua made a fist, inwardly trying to muster up some encouragement for herself. Her stiffed face squeezed out a glittering, bright and beautiful smile. "Prince Jin. Is your highness also planning on going to Sunset Mountain Range? My team is also heading there, so perhaps it would be better if we go together....."

Nangong Liuyun's slender white, jade-like fingers idly fiddled around with his ruby thumb ring. Having heard what was said, his eyes lifted slightly, throwing a dismissive glance her way.

This glance, coldly arrogant and distinctively remote yet also with an indomitable air that terrorized all before him; like a sharp sword's murderous aura, strong enough to make people tremble with fear.

That glance made Liu Ruo's eager heart shrink and clogged to the point where it felt as if a huge boulder was blocking its flow. Unfinished words were swallowed back through her throat and into her stomach. She did not dare to even speak half a phrase more.

Her ashen-white face could only feel the cold sweat flowing down, drop by drop.

Nangong Liuyun returned his gaze back to watching Su Luo; the smiling expression from the depths of his eyes was dazzling and alluring. His pale hand, smooth as jade, picked up a chopstick full of green vegetables and placed them into Su Luo's bowl, with a smile that was eagerly attentive and fawning. "How could you attend to the play on such an empty stomach. Now, be obedient and eat another stalk of vegetable."

Su Luo really wanted to roll her eyes.

Thinking, she really wanted to ask. 'Dear beloved Prince Jin were your royal highness trying to draw more enmity towards me? Did you not see, just across from me, the veins on that young lady's pair of hands rose up, itching to strangle me?'

But Su Luo deserving to be called Su Luo, under Liu Ruohua's dagger-shaped eyes filled with jealousy. She very calmly and collectedly picked up that stalk of vegetable; unhurriedly nibbling on it, as if it was the most delicious delicacies in the world.

When Nangong Liuyun saw that she did not refuse, his face was happy

like a blooming flower. Once again he personally held a bowl while ladling the Wild King Mushroom soup into the bowl, with an integrating and saccharine smile. “ Come, you should also drink this soup. It’s tasty and nourishing, and it’s not bad.”

Opposite of them, like a lonely pestle shaped bundle of wood-pile, Liu Ruohua was so stunned that she almost fell to the floor. She simply could not believe it——

She even wanted to rub her eyes to clearly see this perfect example of male god smiling with such a silly expression in front of her eyes. Is this guy really the rumored callous prince of legend? He who dealt fatal blows to others and possessed some advanced stage of mysophobia? Can this really be his highness, Prince Jin?

There must be some kind of mistake somewhere!

Chapter 58 – Unexpectedly it really was her!

“Jin, your highness Prince Jin?” Liu Ruohua sheepishly asked.

Nangong Liuyun, once again, threw an indifferent glance at her. His frosty eyes were like a pool of ice, remote and cold as he turned his back on her and knitted his eyebrows. “Why haven’t you scrambled yet?”

To Nangong Liuyun, there were only two kinds of people: there were people he liked, and the others, who were all considered outsiders.

If you were able to be incorporated by him into his universe, he would absolutely shield you and be partial without any need for justification.

If you were unable to enter his world, he would always seem courageous but also very scathing, callous, cruel and bloodthirsty.

Currently in his eyes, there is only Su Luo. Everybody else was just fleeting like floating clouds.

Liu Ruohua bowed her head with respect before his majesty , but her hands were clenched into a fist.

Yes, there was no mistake! This gloomy, cold, indifferent person was like Asura, that seemed to come straight out of the center of hell. He was definitely his highness Prince Jin..

But, how could he.....

Nangong Liuyun's words were extremely harsh, and most normal women would have already been crying and sent fleeing by now; but Liu Ruohua was different. She already knew about Nangong Liuyun's cold and callousness, so even if Nangong Liuyun's words were extremely offensive, she still would not budge.

Su Luo looked at Liu Ruohua in a calm composed manner. A thread of admiration flashed across her eyes.

She never thought that a person's face could be so thick-skinned. No matter what happened to her, she could not be driven away. At the same time, she was also a little curious, to what degree of outstanding had Nangong Liuyun reached, in order to make this young lady so persistent?

“Are you full yet?” Nangong Liuyun's voice sounded similar to nature, like the babbling of running water that warms the heart.

“Not yet.” In fact Su Luo could not eat anymore. But in order to watch this spectacular show, she pretended that she still wasn't full yet.

How could Nangong Liuyun not know what she was thinking about? His distinctly jointed slim hand stroked toward her nose like fine jade. He gave a spoiled and indulgent smile. “If you can't eat more, then don't force yourself. If you want to watch the play, then this king will order them to perform it for you to watch”

“No need.” Su Luo gave a simple refusal . With one shove, she pushed Nangong Liuyun away from being so close to her.

Liu Ruohua was dazzled by his smile.

She could never have imagined that the ice-cold cruel highness Prince Jin could laugh. Nor could she believe that his laugh would be so tender-hearted that there would even be a hint of fawning feeling.

But, but that damn woman dared to reject him. She had even pushed his Royal Highness away.

Oh Heavens ! @\$^er! Was she really this ignorant, or had this world just gone mad? To think there would exist a woman who would want to push his royal highness, Prince Jin away?!? Was she retarded?

At this moment, Liu Ruohua was about to collapse from jealousy. Her eyes earlier were pure and bright. But now it was glowing red from jealousy and laced with a bloodthirsty killing intent. She murderously glared at Su Luo, whom she wished she could hack into itty bitty pieces.

Su Luo hardly took it lying down and welcomed her murderous stare. Her mouth hooked into a distinctly cold arc, like indescribably brilliant fireworks that faded into misty nothingness.

Su Luo’s eyebrows declined slightly, cynically staring back at Lu Ruohua as if to taunt her.

Liu Ruohua, aren’t you very capable? Didn’t you rely on the fact that

you are this country's Prime Minister's daughter, and together with Su Xi, treat the past Su Luo as a dog?

What about now? You must be very jealous right? Going mad huh? Really want to kill someone eh?

Liu Ruohua bit her lower lip, stressing each syllable, she asked furiously, "who are you?"

Su Luo shrugged, like Nangong Liuyun, she aired an identical attitude of disregard.

Liu Ruohua rushed forwards. She grabbed Su Luo's hands and looked at her wrist. Suddenly her eyes widened, with cruel and cold eyes like the edge of a blade, gritting her teeth said. "You are Su Luo! You can not deny it. The knife wounds on your wrist were ones I caused!"

Su Luo did not deny it, she faintly smiled, "the third Miss Liu, pleased to meet you."

"How could it be you!" Liu Ruohua would never have thought that filthy harlot, who looked like Su Luo, would actually be Su Luo.

Recalling earlier how his highness, Prince Jin was eagerly attentive while trying to curry her favor; this made Liu Ruohua almost crumble on the spot.

Chapter 59 – Cut off at the wrist

Because of her rattled emotions, Liu Ruohua was tightly clutching Su Luo's hands with such strong force, that she looked like she was about to rip off Su Luo's wrist from her still functioning arms.

Su Luo's expression darkened, and out of the corner of her eyes, she shot a quick glance at Nangong Liuyun. All of a sudden, she let out a muffled groan.

Nangong Liuyun's facial expression became brash and ruthlessly tyrannical in a flash. His sharp, hawk-like eyes erupted with a dense air of fury and a penetrating, icy-coldness. If one were to look at him in that instant, they would not be able to tell what he did but would only see the overbearing shadow of his sleeves as they flew past—

As for afterward, well... there really weren't any afterwards.

Because at this time, Liu Ruohua was already gone from this private room on the second floor.

The only thing anyone could see was her meager, thin body, similar to a feathered arrow being shot, jettisoned towards the first floor lobby. She crashed hard and tumbled in excess to the ground, diving face first from the sky. All four of her limbs were tangled together, as she almost passed out from the pain.

It was not known if Nangong Liuyun intentionally did it. But when each and everyone of Liu Ruohua's school companions attempted to

perform a mid-air interception, with both of their hands extended, not a single one of them was able to catch her.

Moreover, at the time that Liu Ruohua was hurled down; she, by chance, landed on top of young master Zhao's corpse. She opened her eyes and meet eye to eye with young master Zhao's wide, open eyes that were full of grievance and a sinisterly twisted expression.

“AaahhhHHHH—.” Liu Ruohua was so frightened that she shrieked. Her entire persons jumped up, forgetting about her foot, which was engulfed in fresh blood; delayed her from being freed from its viscous and stickiness.

So it came to pass that the sole of the unfortunate Liu Ruohua's foot kept on slipping. Once again, having awful luck, she fell to the ground....

At the time she was falling down, a long double-edged sword just happen to be standing there, at her side.....

Presently, her whole body, face, and hair were covered entirely with blood...Filthy and with a putrid odor that made people very unwilling to be near her.

“Ruohua, are you okay? Are you hurt?” Three to four young man immediately rushed forth and surrounded Liu Ruohua in a group, like the stars that cup themselves around the moon*. Each and everyone of them was nervously twitchy.

“My hand....hurts so much....” Liu Ruohua was in so much pain that

her face blanched pure white, as she was almost about to pass out.

“Heavens, the hand...” When Liu Ruohua’s good friend, Li Wan, saw her hand, both of his own hands covered his mouth and nose. His eyes were completely filled with shock.

Currently, Liu Ruohua’s right hand was severed off at the base of the wrist, and fresh blood continuously gushed out of the wound. It was extremely frightening to look at.

Su Luo’s beautiful eyes were serene and deep. A trace of bemusement flashed across her pupils. With a smile that was not quite a smile, she glanced at Nangong Liuyun. “Oh... How terribly cruel, neatly severed at the wrist. This way... isn’t it too extreme for not having any tender, protective feelings for the fairer sex?”

Despite her comments, Nangong Liuyun’s sophisticated scheme were much deeper than he led on.

When he had thrown Liu Ruohua down from the second floor, without exception, all of the subsequent reactions were within his calculations.

Including when she had sprung up from being frightened, fell, and had her own right wrist fail toward the cold double-edged sword....Every single step, was all superlatively accurate and it was practically calculated without a flaw.

This kind of Nangong Liuyun was, no doubt, supremely terrifying.

To chose him as an enemy, was the most stupid decision one could make.

A secret trace of concern flashed from the bottom of Su Luo's heart....If he sincerely must have her, then how should she deal with it?

“Simple, kindhearted, good girls should not take joy in other people's misfortune eh?” Nangong Liuyun's fine white fingers gently stroked her right wrist. A trace of pity flashed through his eyes, and his devilishly charming voice sounded downcast. “Does it still hurt?”

His deep eyes were only fixed upon her. The depths of his pupils were like the an untouched spring pool on top of a snowy mountain: lustrous and translucent, permeating with a desire towards her that was almost too hard to bear.

Su Luo was afraid to look into the deeper meaning in his eyes and very quickly turned her face away while faintly saying. “It has already stopped hurting.”

She want to draw back her hand, but Nangong Liuyun, in one grasp, had already restrained it. Taking her fair-as-jade hands and tightly clasping them between the large, warm middle of his own thick and broad palm. Slowly and gently he caressed them as if touching a matchless treasure.

The hollow between his palms felt deep and profound, giving Su Luo a sense of security that she had never experienced before.

Everything around them seemed to be very quiet. So quiet, that it was as if they were the only two people in the whole world.

However, at that very moment, the door to their private room was kicked open!

**stars cup themselves around the moon-Chinese idiom describing a group around a revered leader.*

Chapter 60 – To tell you a secret (1)

Su Luo saw, these people were not strangers, but Liu Ruohua's schoolmates.

Su Luo's facial expression remained as steady as a statue, and with a relaxed manner, she unhurriedly withdraws her hands from Nangong Liuyun's palms. She looked nonchalantly towards Nangong Liuyun only to be meet with his dark, unwelcoming expression.

“Who wounded Ruohua? Quickly get your ass out here——” Liu Weiming loudly shouted. However when he saw Nangong Liuyun, his throat suddenly seized up as if being choked by someone. His looked as if they would pop out of their sockets from staring too hard. In the end, he swallowed the last part of the sentence and was unable to make another sound.

J-J-Jin, his highness, Prince Jin....How could it be him?

Nangong Liuyun leisurely leaned on the wooden chair. From his extremely stern, noble, and handsome face an expression of toying with someone slowly emerged. A nefarious and demonically alluring smile appeared as his gaze became dense and overcast with ice that could penetrate into the very bone marrow of the people who saw it. “This king caused the injuries. What about it?”

He was currently issuing a kind of incomparable imposing manner, like a giant taking one step and making the earth tremble and mountains shake. Such an insufferably arrogant manner and unrestrained ego.

Liu Wei was suffering from shock and terror. He had never thought that he would actually encounter his highness Prince Jin here. Moreover, just a moment ago he had gone so far as to loudly insult his highness. He was really... truly damned!

As he considered all these factors, his forehead became covered with sweat, flowing down drop by drop. His face was so ashen-white that it was frightening to behold.

Nangong Liuyun looked disdainfully out of the corner of his eyes, his gaze shone with cold electric light. "Anything else?"

At this very moment, he seem like a giant with a head that carried the sky and feet on the ground. High beyond belief, while at the same time,possessing a seemingly regal grandeur.

How could Liu Weiming dare to sputter even half a word more? His rigid face nevertheless squeezed out a smile, the depth of his eyes full of alarm, eagerly answered. "No, nothing your highness please don't mind me and enjoy your meal... take your time...."

In front of Prince Jin, he was scared to even exhale audibly. He lowered his eyelids, very quickly bowed and retreat out of the room. He also very mindfully closed the door after himself.

Behind him there were people who did not recognize Prince Jin. They still hot-bloodedly wanted to rush in but were restrained by Liu Weiming's firm death grip.

Because Liu Weiming quite clearly understood, if the action was taken by Prince Jin, then he was afraid that Liu Ruohua's wrist was severed in vain. Even if her own father personally sought out redress, he would also return without success.

Besides, having offended his highness Prince Jin but to only lose one arm. That should be considered getting off lightly, no? Liu Ruohua had no other choice than to take this as a lesson in demanding too much good fortune for oneself.

Out of all the people she could have offended... against all expectations! Who told her to go and rile up the living version of the Hell King, Yama, his highness Prince Jin?

Seeing Liu Weiming straight away retreat out with deference, Su Luo was somewhat surprised.

She knows that Prince Jin's reputation was quite great. It had even, at some times, appeared to be quite scary. However, she could never have believed that he would actually be terrifying to such a degree.

The other side had their wrist chopped off and was so afraid that they couldn't even breath heavily, so where would they find the courage to dare to demand justice?

Was Nangong Liuyun's reputation always this frightful? Su Luo, with one hand supporting her bright and cleanly tapered chin, curiously looked at Nangong Liuyun from top to bottom. She carefully took his measure, as if it was the first time that she meet him.

“You want to look at me that much? Want a more in-depth look?” Nangong Liuyun laugh was really infuriating. He pulled Su Luo’s hand to touch inside the cloth covering his chest.

No... it was the exact same. Not even a tiny bit terrifying. Su Luo subconsciously shooked her head.

“Are you shocked,” said Nangong Liuyun as he ruminatively rubbed her head.

He knew what she was thinking about. His tender and gentle side was only displayed in front of her, so how could she ever possibly imagine his savage side in front of others.

“In the end which side your is real self? Su Luo’s face held a quiet, content, and untroubled smiling expression, like the dewy pear blossom: refreshingly clean and alluringly beautiful.

“Which side do you like?” Nangong’s thin, pink lips, with a quisitive demeanor raised somewhat slightly. A serious expression flashed past the depths of his eyes, so fast that normal men and women wouldn’t have been able to catch it.

This question was very difficult to answer. Regardless of which side you picked to answer, both included the word like. Nangong Liuyun, this cunning old fox, would be so bold as to use innocent words as a trap for her to jump into.

Chapter 61 – To tell you a secret (2)

Su Luo's pair of eyes were like water, but her speech held icy-coldness. It seemed as if she could see through everything. As she gazed at the sky outside of the window, she smiled faintly. "I don't know, but I do know that I like myself the most."

"Girl, I also like you the most too." Nangong Liuyun's phoenix-like eyes narrowed slightly. His eyes resembled clear ocean water on their surface, but a half smile seemed filled with half truths like the murky depths below.

"Then wouldn't you be suffering a huge loss?" Su Luo's words secretly held a double meaning.

"This king never invests in a losing business." Nangong Liuyun's smiled like a sly fox that had been cultivating for a millennium. Phoenix eyes narrowed again, and his entire person give off an indolent impression. "Don't believe me? Hmm... How about we make a bet then?"

"Not betting!" It certainly would be another case of the winner is king and the loser warms the bed. Su Luo was not going to play the fool again.

Just then, a fit of noisy quarrelling could be heard coming from the first floor lobby.

Numerous soldiers had encircled the entire restaurant and formed a densely packed, impenetrable formation such that not even a fly could escape.

After the senior provincial official Zhao found out the news about his son's death, his entire body almost collapsed. He secured a pike to his back, then straddling the back of a horse, he sped over to the restaurant at a whirlwind's speed.

Just when Liu Weiming and his companions were discussing when they should take their leave, the troops Official Zhao brought just happen to conveniently arrive to detain them at the door.

Both sides were at a standoff, as neither was willing to yield.

Liu Ruohua carried the weight of young master Zhao's murder such that even her death could not wipe out the crimes.* Official Zhao's heart was already set on getting revenge for his son!

He obstinately clung to one course of action; today he must fetch Liu Ruohua's head which sat on top of her neck... Even the fact that her father was the Prime Minister could not change Official Zhao's original intentions.

But how could Liu Weiming and his companions agree to this? Each and everyone of them was from one of the large and influential families of the imperial court. The elders' governmental positions of everyone of their families, when presented, were all higher than Official Zhao's.

Thus, both sides started to battle it out.

Official Zhao could not be compared to his useless, spineless-coward of

a son. He was after all a formidable fifth ranked martial artist. Just one masterful feint from his lance would be very difficult for even a few people to withstand.

In the end, because of this domineering strength, Liu Ruohua's party finished having suffered a crushing defeat.

Official Zhao's long pike rested on top of Liu Ruohua's shoulder, as its sharp tip murderously glittered like frost and snow.

Official Zhao's grim appearance was similar to a demon's that had come from Hell. His face was covered with a dense aura of death as he ominously said, "kill yourself or be killed, pick one."

At this time, Liu Ruohua's blood from her severed wrist had already stopped flowing. Her face was ashen-white like a piece of white paper, and she could barely even stand upright. However, she was not even a bit panicked. Coldly smiling, she said, "you, but an insignificant official, dare to threaten this young lady? Believe it or not, in no time at all, this young lady will have you in shackles and thrown in jail!"

Official Zhao's expression remained somber, and his whole person was ice-cold and violently ruthless. "Will you kill yourself or do you want to be killed?"

His expression was terribly frightening. It could even be compared to a devil that had fought its way out of a blood-soaked arena of purgatory, frigidly cold without a trace of emotions.

Official Zhao had spent his whole life obsessed with practice and cultivation, thus he had neglected to discipline his son, leading to this tragic event. Consequently he blamed himself. Still to shield his pride from own shortcomings, he absolutely would not let the murderer of his son escape.

Even if she was a woman, even if she was the Prime Minister's daughter!

Liu Ruohua saw the merciless killing intent on Official Zhao's face, and a trace of fear flared from her heart. But she calmly remained unyielding and maintained a cold expression "You want to kill me? Have you asked his highness Prince Jin, yet?"

His highness Prince Jin? Suddenly a thread of shocked terror appeared on Official Zhao's face, who had been caught up in the frenzied circumstances.

His highness Prince Jin was absolutely a stunning existence in the hearts of martial artist.

Since the beginning of the continent's history, his innate skill was counted as number two. At less than twenty years of age, he had already advanced to the sixth rank. Rumor has it that he was already at the peak of the six rank, and not far from entering the threshold of the seventh rank.

Such a genius who wouldn't worship? Moreover, who would dared to be his enemy?

“His highness Prince Jin?” Official Zhao frowned, repeating the last sentence. Was it because his useless son committed an offense against his highness Prince Jin, that had provoked his death?

**death could not wipe out the crimes – dreadful crimes that rankled even after the perpetrator is dead.*

Chapter 62 – To tell you a secret (3)

“Exactly, his highness Prince Jin!” for the time being Liu Ruohua could not worry much more about this lie anymore, she spoke calmly, “We and Prince Jin were both going to the Sunset Mountain Range. He is currently upstairs. If you don’t believe me, you can go and check yourself!”

It seemed there were times when even Liu Ruohua could use her brains.

If you examined each individual word she had said, you would find that everyone of them had been true. But if put together it would create nothing short of a suspicious misunderstanding by implying that his highness Prince Jin and her group were travelling together as part of the same party.

Liu Ruohua only wanted to take advantage of Prince Jin’s *tiger skin*, so Official Zhao would have no other option than to relinquish his enmity and let her go.

This could only work, because she understood clearly what his highness Prince Jin’s status was in the hearts and minds of martial artist.

Sure enough, Official Zhao’s expression appeared to loosen a tiny bit.

Liu Ruohua’s gaze darted towards the tightly closed window, and doors on the second floor. She persisted in her deception, “if you were to kill me, his highness Prince Jin would never let you get away with it! You

don't get it?!? My father and his majesty the emperor already have a secret mutual understanding. Before too long I will be Prince Jin's imperial concubine. Hump...you dare to kill me!??”

Once these words were spoken, everyone was in an uproar.

There was a multitude of people standing in a circle watching. Each and everyone of them started to frown. They certainly did not wish for his highness Prince Jin to take such a brain-dead, bossy , handicapped with a severed-hand woman as wife.

Official Zhao's wrinkled brows became even more tight. The pike resting upon Liu Ruohao's neck was trembling slightly.

Su Luo was lazily reclining on the chair. A pair of clear and bright eyes were fixed on Nangong Liuyun. The tip of her eyebrows rose slightly in a provoking manner.

She somewhat tauntingly said, “yo, your highness Prince Jin. It's your highness's turn to be the hero and rescue the beauty now. Why isn't your highness quickly rushing down to save your future princess? If you don't go now the beauty's head will surely only be able to reside away from her body.”

But Nangong Liuyun only pulled Su Luo into his embrace, as the corner of his mouth lifted into a devious arc. A blazing hot breath puffed near her ears. “What is wrong? Are you feeling jealous because of this king?”

“I, Su Luo eat sweets, eat salt, but never do I*drink vinegar*.” Su Luo's

expression was like a smile but not a smile. Her meaningful glance was just as it had been before; matchless beautiful and indifferent. “Could it be your highness Prince Jin really won’t go?”

“Go, how could this king not go?” Nangong Liuyun tugged Su Luo up from her seat. “If this king did not go now, the future princess of this king will get angry.”

Su Luo was walking by Nangong Liuyun’s side but could not see his expression. At this moment Nangong Liuyun’s thin lips were narrowed in a cold, demonic manner. A pair of beautiful eyes that were both compellingly pretty and flirtatious. seemed to release an intense and harsh killing intent

Two people, one on the left and another on the right, leisurely took the staircase down.

The entrance to the staircase was originally crowded full of people. But at this time the people automatically made a path for them.

Nangong Liuyun acted as if they were alone, all the while guiding Su Luo along. Step by step treading on the wooden staircase, his bearing was relaxed and carefree. The crowd was watching on either side, but in the eyes of Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo, they were nothing but single heads of Chinese cabbages.

“Your highness Prince Jin!” Liu Ruohua saw Prince Jin coming down, and a complex expression darted across her eyes. It was not just a look of being pleasantly surprise. It was also filled with expectancy, apprehension, and every flavor of uneasy emotions. But her final

expression was very firm.

It was because she did not lie, and her father definitely had said this exact sentence before, that she was betrothed to his highness Prince Jin. Furthermore his majesty the Emperor seemed to have given his consent by nodding.

Official Zhao watched as his highness Prince Jin step by step walked down.

Although he had never seen him with his own eyes, but he was definitely certain. The outstanding youth in front of his eyes, was absolutely the legendary rumored Prince Jin.

Presently his highness Prince Jin was just like a dragon that had hidden away inside the abyss. His usually hid away so deep there was not a chance of him being seen. But once he showed himself, he certainly would startle the heavens and move the earth!

Official Zhao frown tightened even more. He must avenge the death of his only son, but also does not want to offend his highness Prince Jin.

“Is his highness Prince Jin here to urge peace?” Official Zhao’s expression was cold. His gaze, like electricity, was unwaveringly fixed on Nangong Liuyun.

“This king has no other meaning.” Nangong Liuyun smilingly said. “However, open your eyes wide and look clearly. The person here is this king’s future princess, so develop your brain and don’t believe what

anyone says. You didn't even know that you had just been swindled.”

**tiger skin – reputation*

**drink vinegar – the Chinese characters apart literally say eat vinegar, together the characters represent being jealous. Basically Su Luo is playing words game with Nangong Liuyun, saying she never gets jealous.*

Chapter 63 – To tell you a secret (4)

Once Nangong Liuyun had spoken those words, everyone once again was in an uproar.

This was especially true for Official Zhao's appearance, as it seemed to have loosened.

However his sentences was indeed really unerring. All of a sudden it was as if it had pushed Liu Ruohua into the abyss of Hell.

“Your highness Prince Jin!” Liu Ruohua was so anxious that her tears flowed like a river, “Your highness you can't do this, please your highness can't... I beseech your highness to save Ruohua, I beseech your highness....”

Only Prince Jin could save her now, but it was quite obvious that his highness Prince Jin had never ever shown any benevolence. Infact, it was because of this that he was widely known as being ice-cold and cruel.

Nangong Liuyun's pair of eyes seemed to be embedded with a thin layer of frost. His lightly colored lips evoked a disingenuous, demonic smile. His tone was soft and gentle yet carried a strong air of harsh killing intent. “In the future, you shouldn't run your mouth so as to confuse other people with your lies. Otherwise this king's future princess will be very unhappy...then the consequences will really be quite severe.”

Su Luo rolled her eyes toward the sky. This man! Would it kill him for once if he did not try to take advantage off her?

Liu Ruohua nevertheless at once apparently understood something critical. She abruptly kneeled down and vigorously kowtowed in front of Su Luo. “The honorable fourth Miss Su, Su Luo. Before, it was me whose actions were inexcusable to you. I now kowtow to you and I implore you to please save me. I beg you.”

She was a daughter from the Prime Minister’s stately residence, a person who had always been in the heart of thousands-no tens of thousands of peoples. How could she have ever been subjected to such insults? This was indeed a tiger fallen out of the grasslands and being taken for a fool by a dog. Once she returns to the imperial capital, at that time she will never let these people get away with this humiliation! Liu Ruohua secretly held these grudges deeply within her heart.

But, what kind of person was Su Luo? While others had been studying in elementary school, she had already killed people with her own hand.

And what was the most important part that a person learned after having trained to be an assassin? It was, of course, their state of mind.

Su Luo’s face was now calm and elegant. Her eyes contained clear spring water that spread in ripples. She was dressed in a graceful snow-white gown that accentuate her simple elegance, like that of an immortal.

She only had a very apologetic smile, then without saying a word, she was pulled away by Nangong Liuyun.

“Wait!” Liu Ruohua, seeing that Su Luo was about to leave, her

expression suddenly became stiff, and a trace of panic passed through her heart. She immediately yelled loudly towards what she could see of Su Luo's back.

Su Luo stopped her footsteps but did not turn her head.

From the back, her shoulders seem to be curved by a knife. Her waist naturally well balanced, flesh shone like polished amberstone and her aura was like a serene orchid. Her whole person was refined and gorgeous just like an immortal fairy that was above the common populace.

“I can tell you a secret, so you have to let me live!” Liu Ruohua's tone suddenly became lofty and arrogant, once again.

“No need,” Su Luo faintly smiled, then, once again, she slowly strode away.

“W-wait! It's related to your personal background!” Liu Ruohua coldly smiled. “Don't tell me you are not interested in knowing your own background? Do you really think that the Su general is really your true, biological father? Do you really feel that the Su family really are your roots? Let me tell you the truth, because it's not!”

Su Luo's beautiful eyes were completely neutral and pure. Her pink lips hooked into a minute sneer.

In her previous life and this life, the thing that she loathed the most was being blackmailed.

“Thank you for bringing this to my attention. However even if you die, the people of the Su family are not dead. I will naturally go and ask them.” Su Luo’s facial expression remained motionless, but a trace of suspicion blazed through her heart.

“Bah! In this world, outside of me, nobody will tell you! The Su family, the people in the Su family simply do not know!” Liu Ruohua’s expression was full of confidence and certainty.

Su Luo frowned slightly. She recalled the original owner of her body’s bitter experience in Su Manor. That was basically an inhuman way to live. Su Wan had also been given birth by a concubine, and her talent was also very poor; but her treatment compared to Su Luo’s were completely opposite.

Could it be, that there had been some other reason in the universe that was related to her background?

Nangong Liuyun, step by step, walked toward Liu Ruohua. His star like eyes overflowed with treacherous cunningness and grim radiance, so frigidly cold that the area around them reached subzero temperatures..

“Okay,” his alluring red lips curved up into a cold expression full of demonic insincerity, ice-cold and heartless. “Now you can say it.”

Nobody knew what Liu Ruohua whispered close to Nangong Liuyun’s ears, because Nangong Liuyun’s expression from start to finish was indifferent and ice-cold. Only Su Luo caught a spark of shock within his eyes that quickly died.

Chapter 64 – Sunset Mountain Range (1)

The Sunset Mountain Range was extremely vast, with mountains that extend forever into the distance. Ancient trees reaching high into the sky, and all kinds of rare birds, animals and exotic beasts; that, at any given time, were being born or dying.

The mountain ranges covered an area the size of a province. Close to the deepest part of the mountains near its center, there were also countless varieties of precious and rare medicinal herbs.

All magical beast were aware of their territories. The more powerful a magical beast was, the closer their lair and territory would be to the center of the mountain ranges. Thus, very few people could get close to the center. Because this went on for tens of thousands of years, it allowed the numerous rare and precious medicinal herbs to accumulate.

Nangong Liuyun was guiding Su Luo into the forest through a winding path on the east side.

“How much longer will it take before we get to see an Armored Back Dragon?” Several fine locks of hair on Su Luo’s forehead were curved slightly, emphasizing a pair of large, vividly fresh eyes that were as sparkling and translucent as jade. They gave off an indescribable feeling that was both touching and full of life.

Two days had already passed since they arrived in the mountains. But in these two days the only magical beasts that they encountered were weak ones. If it hadn’t been rabbit types then it had been deer types. This means they were still circling around the outer periphery of the forest.

“The Armored Back Dragon is near the center of the forest. It will take another three or four days to get there.” Nangong Liuyun lovingly rubbed her head. His pair of beautiful eyes hid a touch of tenderness. Then he was asking, “What’s wrong? Are you tired now?”

He was dressed in a large, white embroidered robe. The Chinese-styled robe was simple and elegant imprinted with patterns of obscure crescent moons. That tempting flowing robe set off his body as an invitation to the pearls among the womanly flowers. He was enticingly charming to all things living.

Being so close to him, Su Luo could smell the light fragrance of the jasper flower on his body. A kind of gentle flavor that held the summer heat. It was an extremely nice scent.

“It’s not that,” Su Luo somewhat regretfully pointed to the medicinal herbs around them. “Look, hundred year-old Lingzhi mushrooms and hundred year-old Ginseng are everywhere, but we can’t take any of them along. It’s such a waste. If only my space was opened, then I could definitely take all of these precious medicinal herbs.”

“The effectiveness of these herbs is just too low.” Nangong Liuyun shooked his head, with a disdainful expression and then said. “Wait until we enter the center of the forest, then you will understand. At that time, this king guarantees that you can collect to your heart’s content.”

“Oh, by the way, the group of people that have been constantly following behind us: It won’t be a problem, right?” Su Luo’s beautiful eyes roamed around and the corner of her mouth lifted into a decidedly

cold arc. It resembled a dazzling fireworks that had faded into something faintly discernible, and then to nothingness.

Two days ago, after Nangong Liuyun saved Liu Ruohua. In response, that small group followed tightly behind them as they entered into the Sunset Mountain Range.

However, they followed neither near nor far behind. They also did not come forth to greet them*.

Su Luo's eyes flashed with a trace of suspicion.

She still had no idea what Nangong Liuyun was thinking. Why would he unexpectedly acquiescence to having them following behind? Even though, they did left a distance of about one hundred meters in between them.

But according to Nangong Liuyun's previous disposition, shouldn't he have already, with a bored expression, driven those people away?

“Even though they are waste of lives, they also may have their uses. Therefore it's best to make the most use out of them while we can, so as not to randomly squander such an opportunity for exploitation.” This was Nangong Liuyun's response.

This response only served to make Su Luo even more confused.

He enjoyed the view of this girl's beautiful eyes wandering around like rushing water in front of his eyes. After much thought, her expression

remained ever perplexed. Nangong Liuyun felt that this expression was really cute.

Nangong Liuyun gave a mysterious smile, as he touched her head fawningly, “You’ll find out very soon.”

His tone of voice was gentle, indolent, and quite nice to hear.

In the forest, ancient trees reached high into the sky, surrounded by verdant and lush vegetation. The area of this ancient, primordial forest was a sight to behold.

From far away, you could hear the deafening sounds of magical beasts roaring through the tress.

The cause of Su Luo’s befuddlement, was that Nangong Liuyun did not walk in a straight line toward the center of the forest. Rather he kept strolling around in twisty circles, as if he was looking for something.

“Are you afraid?” Nangong Liuyun’s pair of eyes shone like the sunlight, reflecting off a bright luster as clean as the clearest pond. It was as if some glorious stones had gathered together all the brilliance while simultaneously carrying a hint of gentleness and warmth.

Even though Su Luo had an astonishing amount of talent, at this moment, she was nothing more than an ordinary person that had zero spiritual strength. In the midst of this primordial forest, where magical beasts run amuck, who knew what things one could encounter.

them – refers to Su Luo's group

Chapter 65 – Sunset Mountain Range (2)

Su Luo's gaze was clear and dainty, as she gave a superficial smile. "What is there to fear? Don't tell me that you think I don't have even the slightest capacity to protect myself?"

Right now she did not really have any spiritual strength, but her previous life had provided her with more than ten years of hellish training. Moreover her career as an assassin wasn't just some useless walk in the park either.

The kind of blood-thirsty instinct to slaughter had perfected a single-minded, fearless, and tenacious heart

Suddenly, a meaningful smile that was not quite a smile surfaced from the depth of Nangong Liuyun's eyes. He was currently hand in hand with Su Luo, when he suddenly pulled her behind his back and stopped in his tracks, not moving.

His beautiful lily-white hands were holding Su Luo's hands. His gaze was languid and devilishly charming, yet it seemed to continuously hold a look of a ruthless tyrant.

All of a sudden, his mouth elicited a sinister smile and he unhurriedly let loose but two words. "It's coming."

What was coming?

Su Luo's heart was full of curiosity. From his tall, straight, and well-favored back, she peaked out, following his gaze and looked toward the front.

From a distance about more than one hundred meters away, she saw an enormous coiled python.

The python was no less than ten meters long; its lower body was coiled into a crude crater. The scales that covered its body was a gorgeous rainbow color. Its bloody mouth gaped wide open, like a sacrificial bowl; and its split tongue was the size of an averaged-sized snake, which gave off a vengeful and malevolent impression!

“Wild Serpent, fourth ranked magical beast with a very strong attack power and highly poisonous.” Nangong Liuyun's dark red lips softly informed, giving Su Luo the detailed explanation.

If it were any other, he naturally would not have said a word.

“Hiss...hisssss—.” The large python's mouth hissed its snake-like tongue, then its mouth let loose a dense green fog.

At this time, a spotted deer, momentarily passing through without checking, became contaminated by the miasma. Not long after it had come in contact with the poison, the entire body of the spotted deer started to seize.

It was as if its body was covered in some kind of corrosive, for even the naked eye could watch the rapid rate of decay as it slowly claimed the

deer. By the time it finally collapsed, there was only a white skeleton left.

On the ground the dense green ink like substance was similar to a carbonated juice, continuously releasing small air bubbles. The air still had a strong stench of rot.

From start to finish, the spotted deer's decay -which started from being robustly alive to being a corroded puddle of melted flesh and bare bones-, took no more than ten minutes.

“Such a toxic poison,” Su Luo suddenly had a feeling of absolute horror.

This poison was absolutely more terrifying than the most concentrated sulfuric acid. Despite this, the snake venom could indeed be great stuff for wiping out any trace of corpses. This function was why people would often journey far from home to obtain it.

Su Luo asked herself honestly, in the event that she came across such a large python. If she wanted to beat it. It would nearly be impossible.

Of course, if she fought with the thought of mutual destruction, it's not like she wouldn't have the ability to battle against it.

In a brief moment, this giant python had given her a vivid lesson.

The existence of the Wild Serpent taught her, that once she entered Sunset Mountain Range, she must think of how to proceed carefully by adapting to the matters at hand. If she want to walk out safely and intact. In the forest she must take care with each and every step with

constant vigilance.

Nangong Liuyun's pair of deep eyes were like a night-black pearl in the middle of the deep sea, shimmering with luminous radiance. He smilingly said. "Girl. Neglect the fundamentals and concentrate on the details. The most useful part of this Wild Serpent is not really its poison."

"Could it be its central monster core?" Isn't it said that a snake's inner core can solve the riddle of hundreds of poisons?

Nangong Liuyun's dark red lips curved up into a mysterious smile. His eyes were overflowing with brilliant lights and vibrant colors. "Very soon you will know."

The person who loved to keep people on tenterhooks the most was him. Su Luo somewhat frustratedly pouted her red lips.

Before, what Liu Ruohua told him regarding her background, he had unexpectedly kept it a tightly held secret. He wouldn't even reveal even half a sentence to her.

At this moment, the Wild Serpent had already discovered their presence.

Its mouth, splitting out a snake-like tongue, slithered and crawled toward them, with fangs bared giving off a sinister appearance.

However, what astounded Su Luo the most, it had unexpectedly....unexpectedly completely ignored her and Nangong

Liuyun. It directly passed them and moved towards their rear.

This in turn made Su Luo, who had been looking forward to Nangong Liuyun battling it out with the Wild Serpent, somewhat disappointed....

Chapter 66 – Sunset Mountain Range (3)

That was the place where Liu Ruohua's team was standing.

But why?

Could it be that the Wild Serpent knew that Liu Ruohua had a very black heart? But when discussing black hearts, whose could be more sinister than Nangong Liuyun's?

Nangong Liuyun's eyes were as clear, bright and dazzling as cut diamonds. Their appearance was extremely good at hypnotizing people's wills with an unusually violent, ruthless, and tyrannical power. He patted Su Luo's head, and a sly nefarious smile started to form from the depth of his eyes. "Obediently watch the play. It will be absolutely marvelous, and this king guarantees that

Satisfied? Really? Then I must watch carefully. Su Luo crossed both of her arms over her chest. Calmly and at ease, she leaned on one side of Nangong Liuyun's body with a pondering smile in her eyes.

When Liu Ruohua and her team saw the Wild Serpent, an expression of wild ecstasy flashed across their eyes!

The reason they had come to Sunset Mountain Range had been to collect items, and one of their tasks was the acquisition of a Wild Serpent's monster core core.

Consequently, before they had entered Sunset Mountain Range, they spent a large sum of money to buy some Crimson Hearted Flower. Nothing was better than the Crimson Hearted Flowers to attract Wild Serpents.

What they don't know was that this was the reason why Nangong Liuyun had allowed them to continuously followed him.

Because Nangong Liuyun knew that if only relying on his own luck, he may not have good enough luck to bump into a Wild Serpent. But since Liu Ruohua's group brought with them the Crimson Hearted Flowers, the chances that they would encounter one were near definite.

Wild Serpent's inner core could neutralize hundreds of poisons, especially the miasma in the air around the forest. Therefore Nangong Liuyun must prepare this item for Su Luo.

Liu Ruohua's team had a total of six people: two women and four men. Their cultivations levels was around the second to third ranks.

The six of them together attacked the Wild Serpent.

In a matter of moments, water arrows, fireballs, wind blades...countless attacks were concentrated on the Wild Serpent's body.

The Wild Serpent spit out its venom, and a dense, dark-green fog saturated the air in all directions. These bursts of loathsome noxious gas spread towards them.

Its speed wasn't really that fast, but its face appeared to emit a malevolent smile, giving off a calm and composed serpent's hiss.

Both sides' strength were seemingly comparable . Thus, they fought each other for a long time without success. No one side could prevail over the other, so for the moment, it was extremely difficult to determine the victors and the defeated.

Suddenly under the sunlight, the flowery crown of top of the Wild Serpent started to shine and flicker. The multi-colored rays of light it seemed to flash, were as bright as the moon and would bring anyone an absolutely horrifying feeling of alarm and panic.

“Not good,” loudly shouted Liu Weiming with an ashen face. “This Wild Serpent is about to have a breakthrough. Everyone, quickly increase your efforts to kill it. We can't wait until it have advanced to the fifth rank, otherwise the only road left for us is death!”

The Wild Serpent was very vengeful, so if you attacked it and didn't kill it, it would always give chase after you until it had finally killed you.

When comparing the strength of a fifth ranked versus a fourth ranked Wild Serpent, the difference was like heaven and earth, a distance that was just too huge.

A fourth ranked Wild Serpent they could still fight. However, once the fifth rank was reached, they would only be tyrannized.

But, his discovery was a step too late.

The entire body of the Wild Serpent was shrouded by golden rays of light, and the dark-green fog continued to fill the air in all directions. Once again, a loathsome stench of poison floated around the forest in disarray.

In an instant, the flowery crown on its head seemed to transform into a jade horn.

The jade horn was exceptionally dazzling, and, under the sunlight, it glistened so much that it lit up its surroundings. It existed as a continuous flow of brilliance like an infinite number of lightning strikes .

“Heavens! This Wild Serpent actually knows lightning magic!” Liu Weiming face became pale. He felt like he was about to go mad.

The lightning system’s attack and firepower was the strongest among all the elements, and it was also very rare. Also among magical beasts the cultivation of the lightning element was even more rare. Who would have known? One of their tasked items would be a freak of nature of such an extent!

“Hiss...Hissssss—.” The jade horn on the Wild Serpent’s head flashed with brilliant rays of light with traces of thunder and lightning.

Liu Weiming shouted loudly, “Retreat! Quickly retreat!”

However, it was already too late.

They could only watch as the jade horn on the head of the Wild Serpent's strong firepower, pointed at its target and instantly struck home.

Chapter 67 – Sunset Mountain Range (4)

At the locations where the jade horn pointed to, brilliant, snake-shaped seeds would shoot towards there with astonishing quick speed.

At this time, its jade horn was like machine gun. Bing..bing..bing... sprayed the bullets. Sparks flew and dragon-snakes danced in the air; the battlefield situation was extremely fierce.

Liu Weiming was the first one to be hit and could only see him momentarily stunned. His entire body was as rigid as steel, his hair was charred black and standing straight up. He was truly a very sorry figure at the moment. .

The second person to be hit was none other than Liu Ruohua. Because she had been wounded before, the marks of blood on her body were still not dried yet. Thus the Wild Serpent's attention was even more attracted to her.

Very quickly this team was being taken advantage of by the Wild Serpent.

The Wild Serpent was not in a hurry to kill off this team. It laughed malevolently, as its remote and icy-cold expression locked on to them. Its eyes was so eerie that they penetrated into the depth's of their souls.

A pair of icy eyes glared at this team making everyone of them absolutely horrified. They were shivering in terror, and their hearts were extremely panicked.

“Team...Team leader. Quickly think of an idea!”

“Team leader, Save us!”

At this moment, almost all of them were urging Liu Weiming to act. After all, he had spoken with his highness Prince Jin. It was for this reason that he was viewed the most suitable to speak on their behalf.

Liu Weiming was still very anxious; seeing the two people watching the play not far away, a complexed expression flashed across his eyes.

He knew, with his highness Prince Jin’s cold and detached personality, he probably would watch them all get swallowed up by the Wild Serpent. Afterwards, he might even turn around confidently and with ease walk away.

Compassion, sympathy, benevolence...these virtues would not appear on his body.

At this time, the Wild Serpent was splitting out scarlet snake bombs , Liu Weiming’s neck went back and forth. Finally, Liu Weiming’s feet weakened at the knees, and he anxiously shouted, “Your highness Prince Jin, save us! I beg your highness please! If your highness don’t take action now, we will definitely die!”

Nangong Liuyun languishly reclined against an ancient tree. His phoenix eyes narrowed and the corner of his mouth lifted into a resplendent demonic smile. His bright blood-red lips shone like they

were scattered throughout with glossy and shimmering gems. However, it remained silent not saying a word.

Seeing that his highness hadn't the slightest thought of taking action, Liu Weiming and his companions were becoming very anxious.

There was only one life, so once they were dead, there was nothing. Each and everyone of them was an arrogant, spoiled child of the heavens. How could they just die in such a helpless manner?

One after another, each and everyone of them shouted for help towards Nangong Liuyun.

“Ahhhhhh—!!!” Suddenly a desperate cry bursted out from among the crowd.

As it turned out it was from a youngster among the team. His entire right leg had been swallowed by the Wild Serpent in one bite.

Immediately his leftover half of leg's blood rushed forth like spring water. It was so painful that he was rolling around on the ground.

Furthermore, the tooth of a Wild Serpent contained highly toxic poison, it possessed violently strong corrosive properties.

One could only see the youngster rolling around on the ground grabbing his right leg, as fresh blood was covered in countless tiny poisonous bubbles that burst forth. It seemed as though it was spreading from the bottom up.

His entire body was in pain from the corrosion; it ought to be more painful than lingering at death's door from receiving a thousands cut or at least not far behind.

As this youngster rolled around on the ground, he let loose another terrifying screaming. Finally he just couldn't stand it, he pulled out a dagger and thrust it straight into his own heart.

Watching the youngster who had immediately become a white skeleton after his last breath. Then recalling how just moments ago he had been so vividly alive among them, Liu Weiming and company momentarily had a sense of sympathy for their like-minded comrades in distress.

Even though it concluded this way, Nangong Liuyun deep, dark eyes were just like the quiet ocean under the white clouds, tranquil and unfathomable.

It was as if the death of the youngster was not even a bit gruesome to him.

Only until this moment, did Liu Weiming and company truly understood how cold-blooded and heartless his highness Prince Jin really was.

In the beginning they fancied the notion that they were lucky to be following behind his highness Prince Jin. Even more, they earnestly hoped that at the time, when they came across danger then they can obtain his helping hand.

Naive, they were truly too naive.

Chapter 68 – Sunset Mountain Range (5)

With expectations that those two cold-blooded people might have actually had a merciful heart, Liu Weiming and company were truly naive.

Nangong Liuyun's naturally diabolical face, flashed with waves of beautiful amethyst like luster on a lake. His expression was like the deep blue ocean under white clouds; they were so profoundly mysterious, that nobody could guess what he was thinking about in his heart.

However, Su Luo, who was of a similar type to him, realized his intentions, and her beautiful eyes vividly began to analyze the situation in full. A trace of interest flashed from their depths.

“Name a price. Everyone should be able to say how many silvers each of their lives is worth.” Su Luo had an indifferent expression.

Nangong Liuyun evoked an expression that was like a smile yet not a smile. His handsome countenance was pretty yet threatening.

Sure enough, the person who had understood him the most was his Luo girl.

“Uhhh....” Liu Weiming would never have thought that the reason his highness did not lend a hand was because he was waiting for them to offer him money. This was too....

“If you want to live then quickly give me a quote, otherwise, who knows which of you next will be eaten alive by the Wild Serpent.” Su Luo’s beautiful eyes narrowed and an unspeakable cunning evil smile appeared in its depth.

At the same time her heart was being filled with secret curses and unspoken criticism.

Nangong Liuyun you are too much. He obviously was targeting the jade horn on the Wild Serpent’s head. No matter what they did, he would have killed the Wild Serpent. But still he insisted on letting these people spend money on purchasing their lives.

What’s even more, this Wild Serpent had only come out because Liu Weiming and company drew it out. Nangong Liuyun was really *grabbing feathers from a flying goose*, calculated to the end.

Sure enough, he had said he never invested in losing businesses; at least this point was indeed true.

“Under my name I have five stores, I can offer you all of it——”

“I will use two Manors with large gardens to exchange——”

“I, I have one thousand taels——” Liu Ruohua saw the Wild Serpent kept rotating around her, trembling with fear she shrieked loudly.

“So in the end your life is only worth one thousand taels? it’s so very cheap.” Su Luo with both hands encircled around her chest, with a

smiling expression that was not quite a smile, the words coming out of her mouth had a double meaning.

“One, one ten thousand tael! ahh——my foot——” Liu Ruohua was so scared that she started to cry loudly.

It was unknown if Nangong Liuyun was satisfied with the ten thousand tael, or if it was because he felt that leaving Liu Ruohua alive had a little more use. In short, just when the Wild Serpent was about to bit off Liu Ruohua’s thigh....

He acted.

You could only see that Nangong Liuyun’s entire body started to shine with golden rays of light. After that, it rapidly spread to the center of his palm. Finally it followed along his fingers and shot outwards.

Like the golden tip of a double-edged sword.

“swoosh——”The sound rung, the golden tip ruthlessly pierced toward the Wild Serpent’s heart.

It passed right through the heart, leaving a cup sized wound on its heart.

Beforehand, Liu Weiming and company had released their strongest magical powers together. All types of fireballs, water arrows, wind-blades techniques had smashed toward the serpent but could not break through the Wild Serpent’s defense; nor, could it get through the creature’s scales

to cause even a trace of injury to its skin.

Yet Nangong Liuyun could so easily dispatch it with merely a shot of golden double-edged sword tip.

Like a knife cutting through tofu, it pierced straight through the very center of the Wild Serpent's heart, and left through its back.

The Wild Serpent let out a loud painful howl, and then its enormous serpentine body segment by segment tumbled heavily to the ground. It produced a huge noise that lasted for a long while, as it kicked up a giant cloud of dust from the ground.

When it fell to the ground, its eyes refused to close, and even in death, it seemed to still be holding grudges within its expression.

The serpent head appear to be malevolent and terrifying.

One-one move?

But he just used only one move?

And it was just a slight wave of his sleeves?

Liu Weiming, Liu Ruohua, and the rest of their company had opened their eyes wide. Staring firmly at Nangong Liuyun, their mouth opened in an 'O' shape and could not say a word.

They all knew that Nangong Liuyun was very powerful, but they couldn't have imagined he would be so strong to such an extent.

Together, with the six of their strengths combined, they couldn't even wound the Wild Serpent, yet Nangong Liuyun with just a wave of his hand was able to kill the Wild Serpent.

grabbing feathers from a flying goose – a Chinese idiom meaning to seize any opportunity.

Chapter 69 – Sunset Mountain Range (6)

Everyone was watching Nangong Liuyun with eyes full of worship and adoration. Especially Liu Ruohua and another girl Li Wan, whose eyes, in addition to being filled to the brim with vigor, also emitted infatuated obsessiveness from their expressions when looking at Nangong Liuyun.

“Cut it off.” Nangong Liuyun’s appearance was picturesque, and his eyes were like a cold heavenly body; its depth appeared to let loose icy rays of indifference. His nonchalant voice commanded.

The crisis had been removed, so everybody let loose sighs of relief.

Liu Weiming wiped off a handful of perspiration from his forehead. Cheerfully and diligently, he ran up to carefully cut off the jade horn, and differentially presented it to Nangong Liuyun with both of his hands. Somewhat indecisively he once again hesitated as he said. “Your highness, do you want this jade horn?”

With regards to such a high level expert like his highness Prince Jin, this jade horn won’t be considered very useful right?

Nangong Liuyun lifted an eyebrow and shot him a quick glance.

A pair of icy eyes, whose depth was able to mesmerize people, slowly made their intentions clear. Suddenly his scarlet, blood-red lips lifted into a devilishly alluring sneer.

Liu Weiming's lungs felt as if they had been blocked by a boulder. An oppressive feeling, to the point where he couldn't breathe.

He cowered, trembling from head to toe and covering his chest in fear. He was unable to speak a single word.

Nangong Liuyun threw him a faint, sideway glance and handed the jade horn to Su Luo. His eyebrows gently rose, carrying an limitless indulgent spoiling manner. His smile was full of tender feelings. "It looks quite nice, take it and play with it as you wish."

"Don't want it." Su Luo's pair of clear and bright eyes unenthusiastically looked at him. She nevertheless quite bluntly refused. "Without effort the rewards is undeserved."

Don't want it! Liu Weiming and his group of people were practically weeping blood from their heart!

Was this young lady's brain scared stupid? This was the Wild Serpent's jade horn. Its JADE HORN!

Numerous people, in an attempt to obtain it, had risked their lives and died trying; but she had actually said that she didn't want it!

In this case, it was even more true that constantly comparing oneself to others will only make one angry.

How could his highness Prince Jin unexpectedly and biasedly treat her so well? Liu Ruohua bit her lower lips, nearly chewing the gums of her

mouth to pieces. She was so envious that she nearly went insane.

Nangong Liuyun still had the indulgent spoiling smile that filled his eyes. He gently rubbing her head. “If you don’t want it then just throw it away. It’s not as if it’s some valuable stuff.”

Throw.... throw it away?!?!

In a split second, almost all of their eyes were concentrated on the jade horn lying on top of Su Luo’s white slender palm. Their eyes clearly were expectantly waiting for her to throw it away without delay.

Su Luo saw their eager expressions turn expectant to the point where they began to salivate. Her heart secretly felt that it was laughable, but her mouth only said. “Since this being the case...then well.... I’ll first help you take care of it. Whenever you think of it then I’ll return it to you.”

Nangong Liuyun was noncommittal.

But once the words were spoken, Liu Weiming’s type of people’s disappointment was one that you could imagine.

Nangong Liuyun’s body showed a cold, indifferent intention. His expression was alienating and unsympathetic, coldly looking in disgust at Liu Weiming. “Inner core.” .

Liu Weiming’s expression was as usual, however his heart was secretly whining about his bitter luck.

With his highness Prince Jin's type of strength, how could he still care about the inner monster core of the Wild Serpent? He originally thought to take advantage of the confusion to remove the inner core, because this was one of their tasked items.

But since his highness Prince Jin mentioned it by name, how could he dare to even covet it silently?

He dug out the inner core and after washing it cleanly, he placed it into a box made of white jade. Only then did Liu Weiming differentially present it to Nangong Liuyun.

Liu Weiming got up his nerves, took courage and weakly asked. "Your highness, this inner core....Does your highness want to sell it?"

However, what made them envious was Nangong Liuyun again directly handing the small jade box to Su Luo.

Keeping silent nevertheless provided the best answer.

"But...but that is our tasked item, and also the Wild Serpent was drawn out by us!" Liu Ruohua felt aggrieved and argued noisily in a loud voice.

She felt it was really unfair. Su Luo did not even lift a finger. Instead she just stood there and watched the show. In the end all the spoils of war just ran into her arms. How could you ask her to swallow down such indignation.

Chapter 70 – Sunset Mountain Range (7)

“Not fair?” Nangong Liuyun’s red lips raised slightly into a nefariously charming smile. His pair of star-shaped eyes contained an intense killing intent, as he stared at her scornfully with icy cold eyes. “Fair? What kind of thing is that?”

He doted on little Luo Luo because she will be a part of his family. Who needed others to make thoughtless remarks? Was it because these people were tired of living?

Liu Weiming threw at Liu Ruohua a harsh glare and said in a stern voice. “What nonsense are you saying? If it weren’t for his highness Prince Jin lending a hand, we would have already been completely wiped out. You still think that you can take the spoils of war for free?”

Su Luo secretly pondered: This Liu Weiming was actually not so foolish. He was able to *judge the hour and size up the situation*. Also his words left some leeway.

If he didn’t think of taking it for free, then was he going to use some means to exchange for it?

Su Luo was shaking the inner core inside the jade box, with a smile yet not a smiling expression that contained some self-evident meaning.

Liu Weiming with a cajoling smile, asked. “Miss Su, this inner core is something that we have a reason to acquire and must insist on obtaining it. I don’t know if you would be willing to be parted from it?”

However, before even waiting for Su Luo to reply, Nangong Liuyun directly seized the jade box. Then he picked up the sparkling and translucent inner core that could shine through flesh or bones and placed it into his mouth.

“Huh....” At that moment, everybody was unable to make sense of what they were seeing and also, what was the intent behind his highness Prince Jin’s act.

However in the next moment, Nangong Liuyun’s unyieldingly powerful palm took hold of the back of Su Luo’s head. His other hand was wrapped around her slender waist. A dense and heavy shadow started to loom ever closer to Su Luo.

“Oh——”

In the next instant Su Luo was being kissed, the type that was like an electric shock that rendered her limp and numbed her limbs when it swept through her entire body.

The kiss had come too suddenly, it also seemed to have been timed perfectly.

The surrounding area had become silent with only the gentle sound of the wind. Only the roars of dragons and whistles of the tigers sounded from afar, could be heard.

Liu Ruohua had almost chewed her lips to a pulp.

Li Wan's meaningful glare was about to bore a hole through Su Luo.

With His highness Prince Jin...How could this be possible!

His highness Prince Jin was a matchless noble existence, he was likened to the gods of heaven in their nine pagoda palace. How could Su Luo this slut, be worthy of him!?

Everyone had their eyes opened wide in disbelief.

Yet at this moment, Nangong Liuyun was kissing Su Luo with reverence and was dragging it on lingeringly, unruffled by their sentiment.

Thus the inner core of the Wild Serpent was delivered directly into Su Luo's mouth.

Su Luo was choking on it and she started to cough, in a panic she pushed Nangong Liuyun away.

Nangong Liuyun did not try to prevent her from doing it, he only heart-warmingly and tenderly watched the slightly panicked Su Luo.

His mouth had hooked into a smug and toying with someone for amusement kind of smiling expression.

His star shaped eyes, below his sword like eyebrows held a devilish

enchanting charm and seemed to be covered with a layer of haze. It was hard to make out, but it was still glistening and dazzling in a way that brightens up a room.

Su Luo very fiercely glared at Nangong Liuyun, but those eyes gave off a beautiful mist: making people who see them founding it to be clever, and to give them a special feeling.

Nangong Liuyun's wicked hands stroked toward the side of his own lips, wishing to use his fingers to continue caressing her abdomen.

Su Luo had lifted her skirt and heavily stepped on his foot.

Nangong Liuyun was loudly begging for mercy. His face brimming with a resplendent and careless smile. His bright and clear laughter was echoing around.

Su Luo heard his laugh and was even more humiliated into anger.

“Luo girl, this time you are mistaken about this king's action.” Nangong Liuyun immediately lifted up his hands in surrender, showing off his obedience and said. “The Wild Serpent's inner core's poisonous nature is extremely fierce, only by using this method will you be prevented from being harmed by it.”

It seemed somewhat reasonable, Su Luo's beautiful eyes was moving around. She menacingly arched her eyebrows. “This time I'll let you go! Next time I'll pay more attention and take note of it!”

Between the two of them, they seemed to be at *swords drawn and bows bent*. However in another's eyes it seemed as if they were having a flirtatious exchange, this scene was extremely ambiguous.

Liu Weiming with an extremely disappointed look gazed at Su Luo.

The inner core was already swallowed by her, it could never be taken back.

In fact, how could he have known, that Nangong Liuyun since the beginning had calculated and planned for getting his hand on the Wild Serpent's inner core. Otherwise with regards to his personality why would he have let those people follow behind him?

So till the end, no matter what, this inner core would eventually be delivered into Su Luo's mouth.

Just at this time, from the distant horizon, waves of melodious heavenly music could be heard.

judge the hour and size up the situation – figuratively meaning: to take stock of the situation.

swords drawn and bows bent – figuratively meaning state of mutual hostility or at daggers drawn

Chapter 71 – A pair of Jade Annulus (1)

Around a dozen or so maidens with lily-white hands like the long and delicate lotus roots were holding baskets full of blooming flowers. They were divided into two rows and were quickly treading towards them in the air.

A rush of wind, like the clear sound of moving water, brushed by. Swathes of captivating red cherry blossoms, floated down like a snowfall being carried by a breeze. Fluttering about and sprinkling behind sparkling and translucent snow-like petals. This scene was exceptionally beautiful and aesthetically pleasing.

Everyone of them was clothed in a white silken dress, with straight and proper postures. Although their individual features were by no means considered beautiful: each and everyone of them was slender, simple, and neat. Too elegant and exquisite to be from this earth; their entire bodies seemed not to have been touched even a little by the vulgarness of the mortal world. They seemed like immortal beings flying by in a realm high above the common populace.

Their ten fingers were slender, their waists were slim, and their footsteps were lithe and lively like an approaching wave of ageless fairies. They also looked like elfin spirits who just started to dance so beautifully that they could mesmerize one to the point of not being able to turn away.

In their midst, there was a flowery litter so refined and lavish that it would stifle people into silence. It was carried by four maidens in a nimble and lively manner.

In almost no time, this flowery litter gently landed. It steadily and securely halted in front of Nangong Liuyun.

Such a grand show gave off an imposing loftiness that was the mark of high status. Who knew which divine place was the person in the flowery litter from? Su Luo's heart was secretly curious.

She lifted her eyebrows and looked at Nangong Liuyun. She saw the corner of his mouth at this moment started to raise slightly. Inside that smile contained a gorgeous resplendent brilliance, as if the corner of his eyes and the tip of his eyebrows were both carrying a smiling expression.

Su Luo could say with certainty that this person was Nangong Liuyun's old acquaintance. Moreover he was very happy to see this person.

Su Luo's eyes faintly narrowed, but her face remained calm and collected. As time passed in her heart, she became even more interested in the person in the flowery litter.

The flowery litter halted and was lowered. A slender, fair hand lifted itself to part the hanging curtain of green jade beads that surrounded the litter.

From the interior, a fairy-like girl in the prime of her youth unhurriedly strolled out.

One could only see her body, clothed in white that was as pure and holy as snow. Her dress stood against the wind with the skirt flying naturally

like a winter snow fairy that drifted above the mundane world of man. Also there were splendid lights that radiated from her; its brilliance could blind someone.

Her long hair dangled down to her ankles. The fine black hair danced carelessly along with the breeze, similar to an immortal fairy on the verge of leaving with the wind. She rode the wind evanescently, like a dying firework slowly fading into nothingness..

Her eyelashes were just like butterfly wings, sweeping up and down while painted in a thick and rich black color. Her eyes resemble misty water droplets and maintained an unmatched grace and peacefulness. Her neck was delicate and graceful, her skin like crystalized amber with ice colored flesh and bones formed from jade.

This was a woman at the pinnacle of feminine beauty, as if she was a beautiful spirit emerging from an orchid hidden away in an empty valley. It was as if thousands of living things collected their best features and integrated into her entire body: in an attempt to shame the people in front of her, into feeling the helpless nature of their inferiority.

Currently, she stood filling the surrounding with her presence. Her lips were like a puckered red cinnabar, with a simple and neat complexion that displayed such a rare beauty. As she silently watched Nangong Liuyun, she seemed to be holding in a thread of light laughter.

Her eyes seemed to be apathetic and alienating, but they were also covered in a layer of watery mist. Behind the watery mist was an expression full of tender-hearted feelings.

Nangong Liuyun's always chilly and cruel icy eyes appeared to have become like a thin seam that cracked open. His beautiful eyes were pitch-black as ink and serene. With its hidden depth that held his source of demonic charm, his smile widened with an overflowing exuberance.

He treated her very familiarly and also seemed to hold her very close and dear; completely different from the approach he used on Su Luo.

“Why did you come?” Nangong Liuyun's snowy eyes appeared to show a slight concern.

“Didn't you also come?” Her smile was very pretty. Her butterfly wing like eyelashes gently blinked, sweeping up and down. Her beautiful eyes were hazy like watery mist, I could still see the pity.

The two of them laughed and spoke quietly as if in their own world and other people were just superfluous.

Liu Ruohua stood by Su Luo's side, now the sneer on her face was very much oblivious. She attempted to cruelly taunt Su Luo. “You really think that his highness Prince Jin will like you? Did you not examine whether you match up to him.”

Su Luo's dark black eyes under the sunlight illuminated a clear reflection of cold, gorgeous color and luster. She threw a quick glance at her with a smile that was not a smiling expression. “The result of meddling in other people's business wouldn't be very wonderful.”

While speaking, her line of sight landed on Liu Ruohua's right hand

that was cut off at the wrist and wrapped up in gauze.

The depth of Liu Ruohua's eyes was full of a vicious hatred. But soon, she gave a cold and dark laugh. "Don't you see? The two of them are a true match, made by Heaven and arranged on Earth (1). You...are merely the mud under the soles of his feet! Not even worthy to lift his highness Prince Jin's shoes!"

1) made by Heaven and arranged by Earth-Chinese idiom meaning: ideal and perfect match made in heaven or made for one another.

Chapter 72 – A pair of Jade Annulus (2)

“Really?” Su Luo lazily smiled.

When had the words, “I like the god-like, noble Prince Jin described by them,” ever come out of her mouth?!?

Boring commoners were always so laughable. Despite the notion that you don’t care about something, others seem to stubbornly insisted that you do. What’s more, at the same time, they tried to deride you for not caring.

“Open your eyes and look closely. That person is the Jade Lake Palace’s young princess. People call her Jade Lake’s fairy. Regardless of whether its innate talent, accomplishments in martial arts, or even family background, none of it is something you a good-for-nothing can compare. You still don’t get it right? In everyone’s eyes those two were made for one another like a pair of Jade Annulus. There won’t exist a even more suited pair then them.”

Liu Ruohua’s eyes were filled to the brim with maliciousness and a mocking disdain that seemed to take joy in calamity and delight in disaster (1). If she couldn’t be with him, then Su Luo, this lump of mud, even more shouldn’t think about it!

“Really?” Su Luo’s expression was indifferent, apparently unconcerned.

She nonchalantly seized up the the immortal fairy not far from her. This was the most suitable companion in the legendary rumor?

They stood facing each other, and it seemed like a painter's masterpiece of being in love and inseparable in the human world inked on a picture scroll.

Nangong Liuyun's phoenix eyes were narrowed, his features were picturesque with red alluring lips. A head of fine, jet-black hair poured down in torrents. A faint, flirtatiously fiendish charm exuded from his entire persons, which was currently giving off a very languid air.

Clothed in a dark, mysterious robe traced with hidden patterns of bright embroidery. The hem of his brocade robe was lifted gently by gusts of wind. It was elegantly and gracefully dancing in the breeze like a brightly-colored butterfly.

The Jade Lake fairy's features were fine and slender like sculpted gems. Her lips were a frosty cherry color and emitted a bright, glossy sheen. Her neck was delicate and graceful. Her skin was like ice that glowed with the luster of gems. Dressed in an snow-white, inviting skirt she gave the appearance of a simple and elegant immortal with a manner that was exceedingly untouched and above the common people.

One individual was handsome and outstandingly talented. The other individual was devastatingly beautiful capable of causing the downfall of a city or state. One was devilish charming and the other rose from the perfection of nature.

Although Liu Ruohua was annoying, but her words were not false. Nangong Liuyun and the Jade Lake fairy were indeed the perfect match like a pair of Jade Annulus made by Heaven and arranged by Earth (2).

Su Luo folded both her arms and narrowed her beautiful eyes slightly. Just in this way, she unconcernedly stood in her original place for a long time, motionless while quietly watching them.

Currently, it seemed as if suddenly Nangong Liuyun just thought of something. He glanced back and beckoned to Su Luo.

However, Su Luo only raised her dainty, slender eyebrows, returning his look with a smile that was not a smile.

What was the meaning of this? Does he think that merely by summoning her with just a wave, that she would just go to him? Was she, Su Luo, in his eyes just so contemptible?

That Jade Lake's holy maiden laughingly looked over. Her shapely eyebrows resembled crescent moons. The black painted eyebrows against the backdrop of her white powdered face, gave off a gem like luster of someone inseparably in love.

Her shoulder seem to be carved like a sculpture with a naturally balanced waist. Her flesh was glowing like crystalized amber and had a serene presence like that of a secluded orchid. A pair of limpidly bright and intelligent eyes watched Su Luo.

It was so beautiful that it was practically earth-shaking and made people suffocate. It made people feel inferior such that they were unable to bear it, thus lowering their head in terror.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth rose slightly in welcome and betrayed not a bit of weakness in any regard. A pair of beautiful pure and deep eyes was so clear as to be moving, as if it can see through everything.

Considering her imposing manner, why would Su Luo who walk out from the middle of foul wind and bloody rain (3) for more than ten years be afraid of her?

The two of them silently looked eye to eye.

For a while, the surrounding area was quiet, and the spectacle seemed to hold a little awkwardness.

However just at this time, an unforeseen event was suddenly born!

Suddenly from the depths of the mountain range came an extremely sharp burst of chirping. As this sound pierced through the sky, it resembled gold grinding on stone. To hear it made people's eardrum sting with extreme pain. A buzzing sound echoed through the area. Their heartbeats throbbed violently with the blood vessels bursting open so energetically that it caused people to almost faint.

At this moment, everyone was shocked. Everyone all looked toward the direction where the sound came from.

In the distance a mysterious force seemed to circulate. The earth and sky radiated with brilliance. All of a sudden a flaming red-colored lightning streaked across the horizon, and the flash quickly passed.

Afterwards, vast stretches of flame soared like a raging blaze emitting resplendent light. It was as if it desired to envelope chunks of the entire sky and burn them fiercely.

“Phoenix! Fire Phoenix!” Nobody knew who pointed to the horizon at the brutal image that quickly flashed by, while excitedly shrieking loudly.

“Dragon! There is also a divine dragon!” Again someone else immediately followed with an excited shout.

1) took joy in calamity and delight in disaster – Chinese idiom for to rejoice in other people’s misfortune / Schadenfreude.

2) made by Heaven and arranged by Earth – Chinese idiom for of an ideal/perfect match made in heaven or to be made for one another.

3) foul wind and bloody rain – Chinese idiom for reign of terror or carnage.

Chapter 73 – A pair of Jade Annulus (3)

Both the Phoenix and Dragon race had almost all but disappeared on this continent. Who would have thought that their silhouettes would actually simultaneously appear today?

The so-called dragon that Su Luo had to kill was only an Armored Back Dragon. That kind of dragon and this divine dragon of legend were fundamentally two different concepts.

The appearance of the Phoenix and Divine Dragon excited everyone greatly, but their current situation was extremely unfavorable.

This was because the bloody battle being carried out by the two divine beasts was causing trouble for the magical beasts in the Sunset Mountain Range below them.

At this moment, almost all the magical beasts were wildly dashing outwards in order to avoid any troublesome accidental encounter and attempting to keep away from the two divine beasts locked in battle.

Currently, there were countless number of magical beasts violently charged towards them at full speed like the tide. It was aggressive and impossible to block.

“This situation isn’t good.” Nangong Liuyun’s tempting purple eyes held a dense coldness.

“Indeed, a wave of magical beasts is coming.” Jade Lake’s holy maiden answered indifferently.

“A wave of magical beasts!” The expressions on each and every other person’s had changed greatly, and their eyes were filled with terror.

Even though they had never experienced a magical beast stampede, they had already been warned by their teachers about how terrifying it was.

Whenever a magical beast wave appeared, martial artists at the scene would almost always barely escape, but at the same time, this fortuitous encounter was an occurrence that happened once in a century.

Because whenever a magical beast wave happened, a peerless treasure would always inevitably appear.

It was extremely possible that what those two almost-extinct divine beasts were fighting over, was a heavenly treasure.

“At the center of the forest...” The Jade Lake’s holy maiden’s beautiful eyes were indifferent as she suddenly turned her head. She wished to continue talking, but then stopped. She tilted her head as her beautiful eyes exchanged meaningful looks with Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun’s charming eyes looked at Su Luo, and the bright radiance in the depths of his eyes dimmed for a split second.

Every time a magical beast wave occurred, although it was dangerous,

it was still a rare, hard to come by opportunity.

If it was in the past, he would naturally go onwards and explore. However, the one next to him was Su Luo who had no spiritual power. He could guarantee his own safety if he had to withdraw, but he could not say that she would certainly come out unscathed.

Su Luo had on a completely carefree expression. With her clear eyes that could vividly see everything, she casually glanced at him. “You can go, don’t worry about me.”

After saying that, a trace of loneliness suddenly flashed through her heart.

Even though Liu Ruohua was hateful, what she had said was right. With her current strength, she didn’t even have the qualification to stand by his side.

He and the Jade Lake’s holy maiden were the ones in their own world. Their strengths were appropriately equivalent and their identities were compatible. And she, seemed to be an disregarded tiny insignificant existence that could only look up towards them from an extremely low point of view in their presence.

This kind of feeling was extremely unpleasant.

A trace of sympathy flashed through Nangong Liuyun’s clear and intelligent eyes. He rubbed her little head. “How can I not care about you. What nonsense.”

After finished speaking, he turned his head and smiled towards the Jade Lake's holy maiden. "Be careful. No matter what, a mere treasure is not as important as your life."

He said it in a warm and gentle tone of voice, completely unlike the ice-cold cruel way he uses with others.

"Thank you for the warning." Jade Lake's holy maiden's pure eyes were touching and her faint laugh was like a cool breeze gently passing by; without any startling ripples or extremely varying emotions.

As light as water, her gaze gently landed on Su Luo's face, yet a terrifying piercing cold feeling suddenly went down Su Luo's back?

Is this woman...really as she's portrayed herself: like lifeless water? Without sorrow or joy, and free from mortal vulgarity?

A hint of suspicion flashed through the depths of Su Luo's heart as her heart sensed a sort of bad premonition.

Su Luo did not dare to say that her sixth sense was infallible, but it had never been wrong for all these years.

Chapter 74 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit (1)

Countless magical beasts rushed toward them in a violent surge with an imposing manner and a scathing murderous killing intent!

Two feet simply could not hope to outrun four-legged magical beasts; and even if they managed to outrun it also doesn't necessarily mean they would come out unscathed.

The depths of Nangong Liuyun's eyes contained a thick chill. He picked up Su Luo and whirled his body around, flying towards the nearby small wooden house on top of a tree.

Liu Ruohua and her companions imitated Nangong Liuyun one after another. Everyone of them used both their hands and feet together to quickly climb up the millennium old ancient trees. They tightly hugged the tree branches, hoping that they could escape this wave of magical beasts.

Jade Lake's fairy turned her body around and looked toward Nangong Liuyun with a detached expression. She saw his silhouette carrying Su Luo in his arms. Her elegant and vibrantly beautiful eyes seem to be covered in a layer of watery mist, nobody understood the meaning hidden in the depth of her eyes that were as pitch-black as ink.

Her face lacked expression, and her red lips slightly opened into an arc, evoking a trace of an impassive smile. Her jade arms clenched at her thin, misty green, full-length, muslin gown that swept the floor as if it was leaving behind a trail of running water. Immediately, the light

muslin danced in the breeze like fireworks that become faintly discernible before fading into nothingness.

The Jade Lake's fairy whirled and immediately flew away in a graceful and naturally relaxed manner.

Around a dozen maidservants by her side were shrouded in icy-cold expressions as they coldly launched their gazes at Su Luo. Soon after, they too, followed her and flew away.

Su Luo's thin eyebrows hesitantly knitted. Her intuition told her that this Jade Lake's fairy smile was somewhat... mysterious?

Sure enough, just when she had flown a short distance away, numerous vultures suddenly surrounded them in a circle.

The vulture king seem to be fixated on the Jade Lake's fairy, and each maneuver was filled with malicious ruthlessness.

The vulture king was a seventh ranked magical beast. It was also a flying type magical beast; compared to similarly ranked land type magical beast, it was even more difficult to handle.

At this time, Jade Lake's fairy's circumstances appeared to be extremely dangerous.

The vulture king was in hot pursuit of the Jade Lake's fairy, as it followed tightly behind her. It seemed that the Jade Lake's fairy was about to lose her life under the sharp claws of the vulture king——

Nangong Liuyun's star shaped eyes held a complicated light, and his expression fluctuated between brightness and darkness, while being profoundly mysterious.

Suddenly, he hugged Su Luo to him, and left a passionate kiss on her bright and clean jade like forehead. His serious expression condensed into an austere stare directed toward Su Luo. "Be good. Just stay here and wait for me. Don't go anywhere else."

Before the words completely left his mouth, and without waiting for Su Luo's reply, his body had already elevated to midair. Fast as lightning, he rushed toward the place where the Jade Lake's fairy was.

"Nangong Liuyun you keep on saying that you like me, but when all's said and done, in your heart she is still more important."

The corner of Su Luo's mouth rose into a faint and bitter laugh such that even she did not realize. A poignant and acerbic meaning was mixed within her bitter laughter.

Now Su Luo finally understood why the Jade Lake's fairy was smiling before with such a hidden meaning.

This woman, her appearance and martial arts, were both viewed as at the top. In addition, her sophisticated shrewdness and scheming was also very deep. And on top of that her extraordinary family background... Gods were truly generous in their treatment of her, providing her with a gifted advantage.

As expected, this kind of talented person was really Nangong Liuyun's perfect match. How could she, Su Luo, the unfavored, good-for-nothing, common woman from a Great General's Manor be considered as something?

Su Luo coldly smiled, set aside all her negative mood and started to seize up the small tree house.

The small tree house was very clean, roughly about ten square meters of space. Inside the tree house, besides the woven mat spread on the floor there was nothing else.

Su Luo motionlessly and quietly sat in the small tree house.

Perhaps it was because of the loneliness of a person being isolated in the way she was, but Su Luo's thoughts had a strong feeling of disappointment.

In her previous life, she had been a renown assassin, who was the cause of the sentencing and the obliteration of numerous people. The vast majority of the people were just a mark to her.

But ever since having arrived in this world, she frequently felt as though she was being thwarted by the gods.

Here she was, only a member of the ordinary people. She could rely on her previous incarnation's skills to defeat a first ranked Su Wan. However, if she were to genuinely battle it out with the second ranked Su

Xi, she may not necessarily be able to win.

Chapter 75 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit (2)

Let alone daring to challenge someone as strong as the Jade Lake's fairy.

Yes, the Jade Lake's fairy did continuously smile at her, with an ordinary expression which lacked emotions. But from within her smile, Su Luo could clearly read her state of mind; and it showed a kind of—disdain.

She had exuded an air of contempt. As if to say, just by a slight move of her finger; she could squish Su Luo like a bug.

This type of impression made Su Luo feel extremely out of sorts.

Within her heart a raging fighting spirit had been ignited!

She, Su Luo was not a good-for-nothing; on the contrary, she was a super gifted genius with an affiliation for three elemental systems. If she was only given a chance, her future accomplishments would not be any bit inferior to others!

Su Luo made a fist!

This time, she must find dragon's blood in order to open up her space element. This way, her wood and fire dual systems wouldn't be firmly suppressed, giving her the opportunity to start cultivating.

Otherwise, no matter how great her innate talent, it would still be useless.

The person she was right now could be considered the richest individual under the heavens. There were mountains of gold and silver within her grasp, but, up until now, she couldn't find the keys to open the door. She could only gaze at the ocean and lament her inadequacy (1) from outside the door.

Time passed slowly, bit by bit.

However, Nangong Liuyun hadn't returned yet.

She was not sure what had happened, because all of the magical beasts had run away. For at this time, the surroundings were very still and quiet. The stillness was strangely eerie, like the calm before the storm.

Suddenly, the storm winds began to rise.

The powerful gale whistled and screamed with blasts that made the entire earth tremble. The small tree house swayed and tottered in the wind's midst.

Su Luo leaned forward and looked out the window.

Laid before her was the scene, of a tornado as black as ink, moving rapidly while roaring towards her exact location

It was similar to a giant creature that extended its bloody mouth wide open like a sacrificial bowl (2), with thunderous snarls, while baring its fangs and brandishing its claws (3). It was as if both heaven and earth allowed it to do whatever it pleases. Nobody could possibly prevent it.

The tornado came hurtling past.

The small wooden house teetered on the verge of collapse.

In order to not be blown away flying, Su Luo tightly clutched a pillar.

Suddenly, Su Luo became aware that under her foot she sensed bouts of earth quaking and the mountains shaking (4). She looked out the tiny window and couldn't help be somewhat flabbergasted.

She discovered that her entire person, oh, it should be more accurate to say the entire small tree house had actually been lifted from the ground.

Very quickly, the small tree house broke away from the thousand year old ancient tree trunk. It was uprooted and the tornado swept it up into midair

However it could be deemed fortunate that the small tree house hasn't collapsed and fallen apart, rather it still stood firmly.

But still, Su Luo's complexion had turned somewhat pale.

She visually estimated that her current distance from the ground was roughly about a hundred meters. If she was to fall from such a height, she would become nothing but torn body and crushed bones (5) not even crumbs would remain.

She have yet to cultivate flying techniques. If she fell down, then there was only one word...death.

Su Luo aggravatedly scratched her head.

That damned Nangong Liuyun! He only knew how to be concerned about the Jade Lake's fairy, while leaving her as he pleased in a random spot at the original place.

And also that damned tornado! Why sweep up the small wooden house where she was? Obviously there were still other small tree houses over there....

Like this, she could also be chosen? In the end what kind of luck was this? Su Luo was hit by a moment of extreme speechlessness....

The surrounding gale of the tornado rages on; however in the eyes of the tornado the breeze was still, and waves were quiet (6). At present, Su Luo sat in the faintly fluttering small tree house, just as if she was sitting in a hot air balloon.

Now if someone was to see this, they would certainly be stupefied such that their chin would drop to the ground.

Because the people of this world had never seen a house flying in the sky....Could this be considered the first time since the beginning of history?

Just when Su Luo had become all too nervous, suddenly, a tiny spherical body was thrown into the small wooden house. It tumbled to the floor and rolled about until it finally stopped by Su Luo's feet.

This spherical object....

Su Luo meticulously looked it up and down. In her heart a trace of misgivings flashed through, it looked like a type of egg, moreover it was a very large egg.

Could it be that even flying in the sky, she could still pick up an egg?

Was it possible for the mother bird to be flying and laying an egg at the same time?

At that moment, three black lines appeared on Su Luo's forehead.

1) gaze at the ocean and lament her inadequacy – idiom: to feel powerless and incompetent (to perform a task)

2) bloody mouth wide open like a sacrificial bowl – idiom: ferocious mouth of beast of prey; greedy exploiter; rapacious aggressor.

3) baring its fangs and brandishing its claws – idiom: to make

threatening gestures.

4) earth quaking and the mountains shaking – could also mean: tremendous battle

5) torn body and crushed bones – figuratively meaning to die horribly; to sacrifice one's life

6) breeze was still, and waves were quite – idiom: tranquil environment; all is quiet; a dead calm (at sea)

Chapter 76 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit (3)

She pulled back her train of thought that was indulging in flights of fancy (1). Su Luo's attention was, without exception, completely concentrated upon the egg.

This egg was no less than the size of a soccer ball. The outer shell was white and glossy with colored rays of light like the luster of gems shining through. Occasionally a stream of light would also streak across the top.

It gave off a dense and mysterious air.

Suddenly, rustling noises could be heard from inside the egg, as if the small creature within was trying to break out of its shell and enter the world.

Su Luo was immediately struck dumb.

Impossible, right? How could this egg, against all expectations, just happen to hatch out of the blue like this in the sky?

However, as if in response to her amazement, the top of the egg promptly split open and a thin crack appeared on the surface. Afterwards, the crack become wider and wider until crisp bump, bump, bump noises could be heard.

Su Luo held her breath in rapt attention and her eyes opened wide

while watching the spectacle before her

She saw, from the fragmented pieces of eggshell on the topmost part of the egg, a tiny head covered with some shattered pieces of eggshells, slowly but surely make its way out. It naively, adorably and unsteadily, rotated its tiny head.

What kind of creature is this? Su Luo had never seen one like it before.

But this little thing looked too adorable.

A round puffy little head, simple and strong, that was absolutely adorable. Both of its eyes were closed tightly like a newborn, the corner of its mouth was dribbling out a lot of tiny little bubbles.

It seemed somewhat dejected because, apart from its head, the rest of its body was still in the eggshell.

She could only see its eyes were still closed. It had a rosy red moist little mouth which was very small, but its nibbling speed was very fast.

The little thing looked like it was nibbling on a large piece of round bread. It first nibbled away at the eggshell near its mouth, then slowly extended to the surrounding area.

It finally finished eating the entire eggshell, then used its nose to sniff around as if looking for something else.

Throughout the entire process, its eyes remain closed, giving it a charmingly innocent impression.

Su Luo's heart became curious. What is this little thing that just broke through its eggshell looking for?

In the midst of her curious musings, the little thing took some shaky steps with its thin, delicate legs; and swayed drunkenly about, tottered to the side of Su Luo's feet. It extended two small paws and grabbed the lower corner of Su Luo's clothing. Its small body trembled and quivered while climbing into her lap....

The whole time, Su Luo's body was completely stiff. She stared at this little guy with an extremely dumbfounded expression.

At the moment, this little guy's plump and chubby little body was already laying on its back in her lap. Its little belly moved up and down with every breath, eyes still closed as it started to make tiny snoring noises.

Its pair of paws still firmly clasped a piece of Su Luo's clothing. No matter how hard she tried, she couldn't pry its paws open.

This... this little guy was a little too unselfconscious. Wasn't approaching her out of its own accord already acting a little too familiar?

Does it think that she is its mother?

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh. Three strips of black lines appeared on Su

Luo's forehead. Drip, drip drip. Her cold sweat poured down.

Her eyes were fixed on this little guy that trustingly came of its own accord. She meticulously and carefully looked at it up and down.

Speaking of which, what kind of species is this little guy?

Say, is it a dog? It looks a little like it could be, but it didn't have fur.

Say, is it a baby dragon? However, it was born to look like a plump ball with a foolish, blank expression that was too adorable. Entirely unlike the image of a divine dragon that would bare fangs and brandish claws (2) with a terrible and fierce malevolence.

The most important thing is this: that egg just now, how did it roll to here in the first place? Was it caused by man or was it the Will of Heaven?

Also, her small wooden house, how did it remain intact when it was in the middle of a roaring tornado? This was simply too unbelievable.

In the midst of Su Luo's contemplation, the small wooden house suddenly began to tremble. She was shaken until the sky spun and the earth went around (3). Her head was woozy and her vision was spinning, making her dizzy. Finally, she felt the entire small wooden house fall straight down.

"Oh damn it!?" Su Luo secretly cursed in her heart as she firmly held on to the small wooden house.

Next to her ear, the wind whistled loudly.

Right now the situation was even more terrifying than being in a falling elevator!

It was through great difficulty that she, Su Luo, had once again been reborn. How could she fall and die again, in this era?

1) indulging in flights of fancy – Chinese idiom: to let one's imagination run wild; to have a bee in one's bonnet; unrealistic utopian fantasy

2) bare fangs and brandish claws – Chinese idiom: to make threatening gestures

3) sky spins and the earth goes around – Chinese idiom: giddy with one's head spinning, figuratively meaning huge changes in the world.

Chapter 77 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit (4)

When the small wooden house fell down, it fortunately by chance, smashed down onto the branches of another thousand year old ancient tree.

Lush branches continuously resisted the downward pressure of the fall. During the descent, although the small wooden house was thrown about until it shattered into tiny pieces, Su Luo, a step ahead, had already rolled out of it hugging the little guy tightly.

Su Luo's movements were very nimble. She tucked the defenseless little guy next to her bosom; used both hands to grab a tree branch; and light as a feather, floated past. Her movements were graceful, lithe and agile.

Because of her ability to quickly dodge, when the shattered pieces of wood from the little wooden house fell down, it was unable to cause her the slightest bit of harm.

However, this did not mean she was safe yet. Quite the opposite, there were other dangers that awaited her.

Currently, not far from Su Luo's location, there was an extremely bitter battle taking place.

One was a creature that looked very similar to the little guy; the divine dragon that Liu Ruohua and company previously shouted about.

As for the other one, it could only be the phoenix bird, burning from head to foot in a raging inferno of flames.

The two were fighting against each other to the point where it seemed that both sides would suffer from this winless situation.

Dragon? Suddenly a thought flashed through Su Luo's mind.

Her brain suddenly light up, she ruefully hit herself in the head.

She had suffered untold hardships (1) to arrive at the Sunset Mountain Range, eliminated countless difficulties, and all for what? It was, of course, for dragon blood!

Since the one that was just fighting was a dragon, then Su Luo's gaze landed on the charmingly naive little guy who was comfortably asleep in her arms.

This guy should also be a dragon right? That's right. There could be no mistake. This was definitely a dragon! From before... that soccer ball sized egg was absolutely a dragon egg.

While she can't get the divine dragon's blood, but this little divine dragon.....was currently in her hands!

hey, hey!

The corner of Su Luo's mouth brought forth a sinister smile. This was

indeed a perversion of “searching everywhere, far and wide,” given how easy it was to find.

She realized that her luck was so good that it could only be described as defying Heaven’s Will. She never expected that a dragon’s egg would just coincidentally be dropped in front of her. Moreover it also spontaneously hatched. And what’s more, it even reflexively volunteered to climb into her lap.

Su Luo started to smile with pride.

Her slender finger poked the little divine dragon in her arms. The corner of the little dragon’s mouth began to froth and bubble as it, sleepily wheezes and snored in a sound sleep. It was completely unaware that it was being marked by someone.

If the mother dragon knew about Su Luo’s thoughts, it really would want to vomit blood.

Just when her little dragon, that she had nurtured with great difficulty, was about to hatch, she ran into a phoenix that was seeking revenge. She could do nothing, and had no other choice than to randomly select a tiny place to store her little dragon egg.

But how could she have known, that the random small wooden house she had selected was actually harboring such a person. Furthermore, by sheer chance, what the person needed most was dragon’s blood?

If the mother dragon knew of this, it very likely would become insane

with anger. What was this called? This was practically called voluntarily delivering her child to the door of a tyrant and begging for it to be oppressed.

Su Luo took out a dagger from within her boots, which glittered like frost and snow, radiating deathly cold rays of light.

However, right when Su Luo was pondering where she ought to start cutting, the little divine dragon unexpectedly woke up.

It opened its misty, watery little eyes; and its little paws started to rub the blurred drowsiness out of them. Its little face was filled with confusion.

This stupidly cute expression, seemed to be able to enthrall any person with its adorable, bewitching sense of cuteness.

Naturally when she saw it, even Su Luo's iron-hard heart also softened.

Suddenly, the adorable little dragon opened its round eyes wide and instantly fixed its gaze onto Su Luo.

Su Luo also silently gazed back at it.

When it saw Su Luo, the little divine dragon seemed to become very excited. Its little mouth opened, issuing forth a sweet-sounding dragon cry.

“Weng——”

The dragon cry rang out next to Su Luo’s ear, jolting her forehead with extreme pain and giving her a splitting headache.

But also because of the sound of this dragon cry, her plans had been ruined.

1) suffered untold hardships – Chinese idiom: trials and tribulations; with difficulty; after some effort.

Chapter 78 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit (5)

The mother dragon and the fire phoenix's fight was at the peak of ferocity for the battle, but it still found the time to turn its head. Only to see its treasured little baby was actually laying in the arms of a person from the insignificant human race. Moreover, that human was even wielding a dagger and making motions towards the baby with it!

Oh, my god!

The mother dragon let out a ear-piercing sound that resonated loud and clear. The sound volume blasted straight through the clouds into the sky.

The mother dragon thought that it would be best to immediately release a dragon's breath to burn Su Luo to a crisp, until there would almost be nothing left. When the transformation to ashes was complete, the residual would float away light as a feather.

However, Su Luo's good luck rested on the dragon hostage she held in her hands as this placed her in an advantageous position. Therefore, none of the mother dragon's long range attacks could be used.

The mother dragon was afraid that while wounding the rat, it would hit the fragile jade vase.

So, it refrained from shooting at the rat for fear of breaking vases (1).

Suddenly, Su Luo saw the enormously large body of a divine dragon leaped in her direction. Such an awe-inspiring, dignified, powerful dragon jolted her heart and caused it to throb violently.

A startled expression passed through her eyes. It was too late to think clearly. She hugged the adorable little dragon close, turned around, and just ran.

This was definitely an unconscious action.

Run, run, run——

Su Luo knew that if the mother dragon was to catch up to her, any hope of getting dragon's blood would be dashed.

Not only that, her life would cease to exist beneath the flying claws of the violently raging mother dragon.

The divine dragon's bursts of dragon roar, shocked Su Luo, making her blood rush forth. The power of the dragon roar was deafening, like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses (2) surging forward.

While the divine dragon was chasing after Su Luo to kill her, the fire phoenix behind was also chasing after the divine dragon. It was also because of the fire phoenix's interference that Su Luo had a slight chance to escape.

It appeared like a blazing path that pierced the vast sky. Ten thousand thunder claps started to echo across the sky, its power to destroy also

contained an endless murderous intent.

Su Luo while running also took the time to look back. She only saw the dragon's malevolently cruel and vengeful expression. The light of bloodlust shining out from the dragon's eyes. The soccer ball sized scales glittered like snow and frost as if each piece contained an inexhaustible strength.

"Damn it!" cursed Su Luo. Her expression changed slightly when she saw the distance between the divine dragon and herself shrinking.

The divine dragon had long ago become enraged. If she was captured by it then her end would absolutely be quite tragic.

Su Luo accelerated her pace. Her footsteps seemed to give birth to the wind. With powerful jumps, she rushed forward without looking back.

Su Luo's heart was very agitated.

With her current speed, she was sure that halfway down the road, the dragon will overtake her.

How can she escape from it?

The divine dragon chased her until she had to go up to Heaven or down to Hades (3) fleeing and still couldn't escape.

In the meanwhile, the little guy in her arms was also restless. It

apparently felt that they were playing a game. It stretched out its round, plump head and joined with its mother dragon in issuing dragon roars up here, down there (4).

Su Luo was frustrated to death. She half threatened and half menacingly patted its head. “Do not call out!”

The adorable little dragon did not seem to understand the meaning of Su Luo’s words. Its round, circular eyes were full of confusion. However, after seeing Su Luo’s cruel and sinister expression, it weakly withdrew its neck and silently contracted its little head back into Su Luo’s arm.

However, after a short while, the little dragon reverted to its old ways. The little head once again came out to explore.

“You’re not allowed to yell, go back!” Su Lu said while tapping its head. The little dragon once again did what it was told and very obediently pulled back into Su Luo’s arms.

As a result, every time the little dragon would spring out, Su Luo would flick it back in.

It would come out to explore and then once again be bounced back in.

Due to this back and forth, the adorable little dragon was under the impression that Su Luo was playing a game with it. Ha, ha, ha, it laughingly chortled while playing along happily.

Later on, Su Luo was too lazy to poke the little dragon so it became

upset. The little dragon started to wail awooo awoo loudly. An expression of being wronged appeared on its little face, its eyes were gleaming with tears.

The three black lines on Su Luo's forehead once again appeared.

All she wanted was a little dragon's blood. It should have been easy, right? In front she had an adorable little dragon stirring up trouble, behind she had a large divine dragon pursuing closely and unwilling to let go...

The divine dragon's speed was like lightning. Wherever it goes all the grass and trees would fall to both sides, as if to open a path.

1) refrained from shooting at the rat for fear of breaking vases – idiom: to not act against an evil so as to prevent harm to innocents.

2) magnificent army with thousands of men and horses – idiom: impressive display of manpower; all the King's horses and all the King's men.

3) go up to Heaven or down to Hades – idiom: whichever way, I don't care; to decide to go ahead without foreboding.

4) up here, down there – idiom: to rise and fall in succession; no sooner one subsides, the next arises; repeating continuously; occurring again and again (of applause, fires, waves, protests, conflicts, uprisings etc)

Chapter 79 - To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit (6)

The rumbling echoes of tumbling rocks seemed to grow, and the trees that were blocking the path were immediately transformed into ashes by Dragon's Breath.

After a long chase it was still unable to catch up. The divine dragon was so infuriated, that both its eyes were red with anger. However it was still afraid of injuring the little divine dragon, so it won't dare to fire off a Dragon's Breath.

The large divine dragon's eyes continued to burn with flames of fury. The huge dragon tail resembled a chain of thickly linked iron swinging dangerously around. In one spot it had swept, it snapped all the forest trees within ten meters of its body.

Flying leaves swirled in the air as a giant cloud of dust rose.

Although Su Luo was not swept up by the dragon tail, she was hit by flying fragments of wood.

A piece of broken wood ruthlessly knocked against her back. When it did, Su Luo felt as if her back was about to split wide open. She felt as if a huge boulder had been pressing down on her chest, so heavily that made it nearly impossible for her to breath.

She felt that the qi and blood in her entire body rolled over in waves. A sweet coppery taste materialized in her throat. Unable to keep it in, she sprayed out a stream of blood.

“Phoo——” The soles of Su Luo’s feet swayed, almost unable to stand.

Just at this time, a sense of an impending crisis rushed through her mind.

This was caused by the divine dragon behind her, who was unexpectedly preparing to unleash Dragon’s Breath. An awe-inspiring radiance streaked by, and the brilliant rays were like sharp swords launched toward Su Luo.

Su Luo’s complexion had immediately undergone a major change.

She spared no effort (1) in rushing towards the tilting thorns, her speed was so quick that only an incomplete shadow was left behind.

That slash of intense radiance was like the tip of a double-edged sword, that directly turned the trees within a hundred meters ahead of it into ashes. Even the ground was completely split open leaving a terrifying large fissure in the earth. The soil and mud were also turned into fine dust.

Su Luo dangerously avoided this killing move. Yet an icy chill emerged from her heart, and her forehead was instantly covered in cold sweat.

She was almost at the end of her rope and was barely hanging in by a thread.

But fortunately, at this time the fire phoenix had already caught up with the divine dragon.

Consequently, these two divine beasts' blood feud resumed. This provided Su Luo with a little opportunity that she could take advantage of.

If the divine dragon did not fear of trouble in the rear (2), Su Luo knew she simply would not have been its opponent. Very likely she would have already been slashed to death by the divine dragon's claws without being able to run for more than several hundred meters.

However in the recent past Su Luo seemed to be cared for by the goddess of fortune.

Against all expectations, on the back heels of this divine dragon, the fire phoenix followed up and continued its battle with the dragon. Moreover, this fire phoenix had narrow-mindedly (3) taken advantage of its difficulties. As a result the divine dragon had no other alternative than to face Su Luo with hateful regret while gnashing its teeth (4).

Whenever the divine dragon was about to kill off Su Luo, the fire phoenix that had been following close behind would come out and cause a disturbance. This kind of situation repeated itself again and again, enraging the divine dragon until it nearly spat out blood.

But now, even Su Luo also had a kind of urge to spit out blood.

It's over!

When Su Luo saw the barren cliffs and the precipitous rock faces ahead, she immediately wanted to start to cry but lacked the tears to begin.

At this time, all three directions moving forward were blocked by an overhanging cliff and behind her the mother dragon pursued feverishly, unwilling to let go. Now she basically had nowhere to escape!

What to do? Could it be that her hands were practically tied and set to be captured?

Out of the question! Even if she was to return the adorable little dragon now, the divine dragon will absolutely not let her get away.

At present she still had not arrived at the dead-end road, so surely there was still another chance to save herself.

Sure enough, heaven never barred one's way (5).

Su Luo's sharp eyes saw a perfectly straight dark green creeper vine hanging down the cliff.

Su Luo gave it a few tugs and found that this rope-like creeper vine was apparently frequently used by people before her. She need not worry about the firmness aspect of the vine.

It seems as if the Heavens really don't want me to die!

Su Luo's heart immediately rejoiced.

She tucked the adorable little dragon into her bosom, afterwards she used her hands to nimbly grab the creeper vine. She used both her hands and feet to rapidly climb up the tall overhanging cliff. It took her less than a quarter of the hour to reach the top.

On top of the cliff was a flat plane covered by a meadow. A gentle breeze passed by and rustled a tidy area of the field into a rising and falling motion, like a jade green wave that rippled. This sight gave her the sensation of an untroubled heart, pleased spirit (6).

Standing on top of the precipice and gazing into the distance. Su Luo could clearly see the feverish fight between the divine dragon and the fire phoenix not far way.

It was as if they had claimed an area of heaven and earth for themselves. Fiery ocean patches spread endlessly, with soaring flames boiling over like lava.

1) spared no effort – idiom: to do one's utmost

2) fears of trouble in the rear – idiom: family worries (obstructing freedom of action); worries about the future consequences; often in negative expressions, meaning “no worries about anything”

3) narrow-mindedly – idiom: petty; ungenerous

4) *gnashing its teeth* – idiom: displaying extreme anger; fuming with rage between gritted teeth

5) *heaven never barred one's way* – idiom: don't despair and you will find a way through; never give up hope; never say die.

6) *untroubled heart, pleased spirit* – idiom: carefree and relaxed.

Chapter 80 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit (7)

Good, very good, extremely good!

If she didn't take advantage of this fortunate timing, she wouldn't get another chance.

Su Luo's heart rejoiced. Using one hand, she brought out the adorable little dragon from within her embrace while the other hand searched within her bosom for the jade box that she had prepared.

The Celestial Spirit water she stole from Su Manor and the Spatial Grass she received from Nangong Liuyun were both stored in the jade box.

The jade box had the ability to keep things fresh that resembled refrigeration. Even if the Spatial Grass was stored for a few decades, when it's taken out later, it would be as tender and fresh as if it had just been picked.

However, at this moment, a look of astonishment flashed through Su Luo's eyes!

Where was the jade box? Where was her jade box? Su Luo's face immediately become puzzled and unconvinced.

She remembered very clearly that when she was alone in the small

wooden house before, she had personally taken out the jade box to check. How could it have disappeared?

Did she lose it when she fell down the ancient tree?

Not possible. She clearly remembered the jade box was in her arms when she tucked the adorable little dragon in there, too. How could it have suddenly disappeared between that time and now?

Could it be that she had dropped it on top of the overhanging cliff? Su Luo looked down and began to search everywhere from left to right and in all directions. Ultimately, she ended up laying on the ground and rummaging through the soil, but she still could not find a trace of the jade box.

This could truly be called...having picked up a sesame seed while losing a watermelon!

Su Luo just wanted to cry but lacked the tears.

Undoubtedly the dragon's blood is right in front of her, but the Spatial grass and the Celestial Spirit water had actually disappeared. What could be worse?

While Su Luo was in the midst of dismay and going around in circles, the adorable little dragon from the beginning had been looking up at Su Luo with a pair of eyes which contained a bewildered and foolishly stupid expression. Its thin and delicate little paws grabbed onto Su Luo's trouser leg and a pair of small, short legs followed Su Luo in continuously

circling around. Furthermore, it seemed as if it was chewing something in its mouth.

A flash of insight appeared in Su Luo's mind; she suddenly remembered the scene of the adorable little dragon eating the eggshells from before.....

She couldn't be that unlucky right?

A kind of ominous premonition emerged from within Su Luo's heart. She picked up the adorable little dragon and with slender fingers pried open its tiny dragon mouth.

Following a close examination, three lines of bursting veins formed on Su Luo's forehead. For a split second she even had the desire to strangle the adorable little dragon.

What did she see? She actually found pieces of the jade box in the adorable little dragon's mouth that had yet to be swallowed.

She absolutely could not have mistaken that bright green characteristic of the jade.

This little thing! It...it actually ate the small jade box!

Su Luo had a strong urge to flip the little dragon on its stomach in her lap and spank its butt.

After a while of being mad at herself, Su Luo unhappily fixed her gaze on the adorable little dragon, as if attempting to kill it with her meaningful glare.

However, the adorable little dragon seemed to be completely unaware of her glare. Instead, its head weaved to and fro, its sleepy eyes were drowsy from dozing off, the corner of its mouth was even splitting out tiny blue bubbles...

Su Luo was so infuriated that with a swish, she took out her personal dagger. She threateningly gestured everywhere along the small body of the adorable little dragon with the dagger and very fiercely said. “Celestial Spirit water and the Spatial grass were swallowed but it shouldn’t have been digested yet, right?”

The adorable little dragon opened its misty eyes. Its face had a sluggish look of having just woken up. She only saw its little mouth move closer and then afterwards ——

A crisp chomp sound rang out.

Su Luo was once again dumbfounded.

She rigidly fixed her eyes on the dagger handle used for self-protection and once again had a feeling of being driven irascibly mad!

Damn it! Nangong Liuyun had said this dagger was made from top grade iron and also bragged about how exceptionally sharp it was. Unexpectedly...unexpectedly it had become lunch for this little guy who

in one bite chewed it apart.

The adorable little dragon was munching away as if eating something very delicious like a cookie, with crisp crunching noises that gave off a sweet and flavorful impression.

Su Luo was about to hit her forehead again.

She felt that if she was to continue to stay together with the adorable little dragon, either she will be driven mad by this silly little dragon, or she will cut this silly little dragon into pieces. These were the only two possible roads she could take.

Chapter 81 – To subdue a foolish, adorable, pampered spirit (8)

Just what had she walked away with? Originally she thought it was a treasure from the heavens; but she never would have expected that she had actually carried back a tiny demon!

Before she believed that she was the goddess of fortune reincarnated as a mortal, but, now she felt that she was a villain that had killed the goddess's father and led to her decline.

How did it end up like this? Spatial Grass and Celestial Spirit water were gone, doesn't this mean that she will never be able to open her space?

The adorable little dragon apparently could detect Su Luo's anxiety, and it tilted its tiny head.

Su Luo worriedly paced around with the dragon's swaying little legs following closely behind. It wobbled and shook while it fumbled after her from here to there. If strangers were to see this scene, they might be unsure whether to laugh or cry.

In the end, Su Luo crouched down, picked up the silly little dragon, looked it in the eye, and fiercely asked, "Little guy, you tell me. Should I stew you, or roast you, or stir-fry you?"

The silly little dragon was completely unaware it was about to be food.

It tilted its head, and a pair of large, limpid, amber eyes foolishly watched Su Luo with a deep sense of puzzlement.

“Don’t know how to speak right? Then I’ll just take it as you agreeing with whatever I choose?” Su Luo smiled while fishley surveying it. Holding her broken dagger and gestured over its little paws.

As her mind became clear she began to realize something. Since Nangong Liuyun had obtained a blade of Spatial Grass, it should be the case that there was a second one.

As for the Celestial Spirit water, since the Su family had been able to obtain it before, then there was sure to be more in this world. As long as she spend some time searching, then she definitely will find it.

As for this dragon’s blood, if not for a coincidence by chance, it would have been even harder to come by.

What’s more, this was actually divine dragon’s blood, and much better when compared to the whatever inferior blood that came from the Armored Back Dragon.

However, looking at the silly little dragon in front of her, Su Luo had her worries.

This little thing, that had just hatched, was so thin and feeble, with delicate arms and legs. How could she take action?

She had no desire to kill it; she only wanted to take a little blood from

it. But she was worried that with one strike of her dagger would the adorable little dragon die?

Just when Su Luo was indecisively wavering, suddenly the adorable little dragon leaned closer to her bosom, with eyes closed it reflexively sniffed around in her embrace like a piglet seeking milk to drink.

Su Luo immediately became speechless.

With one grab she pulled out the little guy and unhappily scowled, “I’m definitely not your dragon mother, so don’t even think about poking around.”

The silly little dragon opened its misty eyes, and it stupidly looked at Su Luo. Suddenly——

She only saw it opening its little mouth, a sharp and clear dragon’s cry was uttered like a soft whistle——

Su Luo was immediately caught off guard, and her eardrums were in extreme pain from the shock. Her qi and blood rolled over into the pit of her stomach. She almost spitted out another mouthful of blood again.

However, without waiting for Su Luo’s reaction, the silly little dragon immediately opened its mouth and bit Su Luo’s wrist!

“Ahhh!” A burst of acute pain almost made Su Luo jumped up.

Although it had just hatched, dragon seeds are still dragon species, gifted and super strong. Its baby teeth were sharp, hard and strong. Su Luo's blood madly rushed forth from the bite wound on her wrist.

She discovered that if she continued to stay with the silly little dragon, she sooner or later, would be spitting out blood. If she wasn't busy being infuriated to the point of spitting blood, then she would be jolted by its roars to spit blood, or just bleeding from its bite.

Su Luo scowled at the silly little dragon, but it employed both of its limpid, waterlogged eyes and returned her gaze with a woebegone, pity-me expression. Moreover, both of its paws were clenched into tiny fists under its chin in an irresistibly cute posture.

Looking at the pitiful appearance of the silly little dragon, Su Luo's breath was trapped in her lungs and was unable to explode out.

Just at this moment, suddenly——

A band of intense, golden radiance enveloped the silly little dragon. She merely saw a small round lump of blood flew out of the silly little dragon's mouth. This blood had Su Luo's blood within it and also contained the little foolish dragon's own blood.

She only saw that ball of blood unexpectedly take the form of a strange pattern of symbols. This design emitted an intensely dense and black air of mystery.

Su Luo was dumbfounded as she watched this scene, she simply was

unable to react.

“This...This really is....” Previously, she had flipped through all the books on this continent’s history and general knowledge, therefore a faint speculation appeared in her mind.

Chapter 82 – You have been abandoned (1)

She saw that ball of blood quickly split in two, half flew into Su Luo's body, the other half flew into the adorable little dragon's body.

While Su Luo was still standing there astonished, a burst of pain suddenly penetrated through her brain. Afterwards, an enormous amount of knowledge immediately rushed into her head like a tide.

The adorable little dragon had actually formed a contract with her? Moreover, it was a contract between equals, not one of subjugation.

“Adorable little dragon, what are you called?” Su Luo could sense a thread of spiritual connection with the adorable little dragon, as if she can conduct a telepathic exchange with it.

“Mah, Mah...” The young dragon's words weren't clear.

“MahMah? What kind of name is that? Forget it, I'll just call you Meng Meng (1) from now on, okay?” Su Luo's slender fingers rubbed the round and chubby head of the adorable little dragon.

“Ha, ha...” The adorable little dragon seemed to be overjoyed. It laughed until its eyes became narrow lines.

Without using any power, she had managed to subdue a little divine dragon. This gave Su Luo a feeling of being blessed, akin to the sensation of pies magically falling from the sky.

Anyways, it was obvious that the goddess of fortune once again favored her.

Suddenly, the scene in front of her eyes blurred. Su Luo dodged, but she had already entered a completely unfamiliar place.

Su Luo carried the adorable little dragon and inquisitively looked around.

Don't tell me, could it be....that this was her space?

But this space was really small and only about ten square meters in size. Moreover, it only had a small fountain-like spirit spring and there was nothing else?

Also, what made Su Luo even more depressed was that the adorable little dragon's body can enter. But as for her, only her spirit can enter.

Her spirit entered the space, but her body was still outside.

This made her somewhat depressed. It proved that her space was different from the legendary rumored space in one's body.

The space spoken of in legendary rumors stated that the owner can enter with their physical body. This way, when in danger, the person at any time can avoid harm by entering their space. This indeed was the best treasure to bypass being killed for property while on a journey away

from home.

The reason why Su Luo dared to kidnap the adorable little dragon was largely in part due to her certainty that when the moment comes, she would have her space. When the divine dragon that chased and wanted to kill her arrived, she could hide in her space and thus her safety would be guaranteed.

However looking at the current situation, she would have to take her time making a decision (2).

Su Luo quietly examined this difficult to come by space.

At this moment, the adorable little dragon had already taken some steps with its little short legs. Its entire body was on its stomach by the side of the spirit spring, with its little head leaning in to enthusiastically drink the spring water.

The mouth of the spring was merely the size of a wooden barrel and the spring water was so clear that you could see the bottom. It also issued a faint but sweet fragrance.

Su Luo drank a mouthful from the spirit spring and immediately felt as if the filth in her entire body had washed away, leaving nothing behind. Her entire body was relaxed and invigorated, her bright expression was full of crisp vital energy.

But, this was not right...

Su Luo suddenly realized that this spirit spring compared to the Celestial Spirit water she stole from the Su Manor was exactly the same!

She previously had tasted a tiny bit of the Celestial Spirit water, so now with just one drink she could determine it.

Su Lu immediately felt as if a stone was lodged in her throat making her speechless.

Before, in order to get that Celestial Spirit water, she had suffered untold hardships to steal it. She had been chased after by that conveniently cheap old father which caused her to run around the entire Manor. However, she never expected that after opening her space, the Celestial Spirit water available did not amount to mere bottles but instead contained an entire fountain of spirit spring.

Wasn't the goddess of fortune smile down upon her too much? There was no way she could return the favor.

While Su Luo was in the midst of her narcissistic thoughts, suddenly she had a very bad premonition. She became aware of a scathing murderous aura that was closing in from afar.

She exited her space and tilted her head up to look. That divine dragon who was pursuing closely without letting go had arrived!

Now, it sprayed a mouthful of Dragon's Breath directly towards her!

Su Luo was so scared that her complexion quickly changed.

She turned and just ran, similar to a cunning rabbit running at lightning speed.

1) *Meng Meng* – Chinese pinyin for the character adorable. She named the dragon adorable, adorable

2) *to take her time making a decision* – idiom: *to consider at length*

Chapter 83 – You have been abandoned (2)

Maybe it was due to drinking the Celestial Spirit water, but Su Luo suddenly that felt her whole body had become light and graceful. She felt as lithe as a swallow, and her speed compared to before was faster by a large margin.

Previously she was shaken until she spat out blood. She had run until utter exhaustion, but under a mouthful of spirit spring, these symptoms had now all disappeared.

Run, run, run.

Su Luo ran to the other side, grabbed the creeper vine and jumped off to swung all the way to the other side of the cliff.

The divine dragon was tightly pursuing behind her, unwilling to let go.

It breathed out a Dragon's Breath towards her, half of the cliff suddenly collapsed, numerous rocks began to rain onto Su Luo.

Su Luo fell like a flexible Flood dragon (1), jumping right and left as she continued to dodge.

When the chase got extremely close for comfort, Su Luo suddenly had a flash of insight that made her firmly slapped herself in the head.

Her space had been opened already, so the adorable little dragon's blood held no more use for her. She can just return the adorable little dragon. How could she have been so stupid? How could she not have thought of this earlier?

Su Luo's thoughts were well developed, but reality was very different.

When she had come out, the adorable little dragon had been thrown into her space, so currently, Su Luo could clearly see the adorable little dragon with its tiny butt raised and its whole body lying in front of the fountain. It had its face in the spirit spring glup, glup, drinking it down. Slowly, the places where the spirit spring was located began to disappear.

Inside Su Luo her mind and heart were in great pain.

She hastily summoned the adorable little dragon in her mind, "little Meng Meng, good boy, nice boy, quickly come out now."

"....." the adorable little dragon continued to drink.

"Your home's master is about to be beaten up by your mom! Quickly come out!" Su Luo dodged left and right, while she continued to call anxiously.

"....." the adorable little dragon clutched the earth at the side of the spirit spring with its two small paws, dipped its head and continued to drink.

On Su Luo's head, three lines of veins burst out.

This disobedient little guy, when she escaped this, he'll see how she'll spank his little ass.

On this road, Su Luo was being chased by the divine dragon while constantly zig-zagging and scurrying around in all directions. Finally, even she did not know where she had ended up.

Suddenly, Su Luo sensed that there were people in front, and they were even people she was familiar with.

Su Luo's eyes flashed with a secretive and evil look; then, with no guilt at all, she guided the divine dragon in their direction.

Leading the trouble to the east (2), this was a trick Su Luo was very skilled at.

Soon, Su Luo had gotten so close that she could see a five-person group

The group was not just any random group. It was none other than Liu Ruohua's group.

When Liu Ruohua turned her head to see Su Luo whole body's battered and exhausted appearance, obviously she looked very happy.

She looked up, down and all over Su Luo; at last with an unbridled laugh she grinned, "Su Luo, so it was you? We were only separated for so long, yet how did you become this embarrassingly disheveled?"

Su Luo absent-mindedly looked over at her, she blandly responded with one sentence, “and you’re not unkempt?”

Currently, Liu Ruohua’s clothing was filthy and tattered from head to toe. Her face was covered in scars from being scratched by tree branches, bloody all over, she was a complete mess.

Her face was probably injured by the tornado from before.

Liu Weiming looked at Su Luo, his eyes flashed with a complex look. He laughed with enthusiasm, “Miss Su? How come his highness Prince Jin is not with you?”

Su Luo let out a sigh, “His highness Prince Jin had some business and left for a while, he will be back soon. Do you have some business that need him?”

When she heard this, Liu Ruohua let out a huge, maniacal mocking laugh. She pointed at Su Luo and said, “You little credit claiming whore! You think we don’t know? His highness Prince Jin had already left chasing after the Jade Lake’s fairy. He abandoned you, yet you still don’t understand? You’re just his highness Prince Jin’s plaything, a pawn that he can always discard at anytime!”

1) Flood dragon – legendary dragon with the abilities to control rain and floods

2) Leading the trouble to the east – idiom: meaning redirecting the

trouble onto someone else

Chapter 84 – You have been abandoned (3)

“What nonsense are you saying?” Su Luo feigned anger and glared at her with eyes full of hatred.

“What I said was nonsense? Ha, ha, ha, I’m laughing to death. I’m really dieing of laughter!” Liu Ruohua laughed until tears came out. In her heart, her crazy envy of Su Luo completely dispersed into haze due to Su Luo having been discarded.

Only Liu Ruohua’s taunting laugh could be heard. She then sneered, “how about you tell me. Didn’t his highness Prince Jin go looking for the Jade Lake’s fairy?”

Su Luo smiled coldly.

Liu Ruohua’s guess wasn’t wrong. Didn’t Nangong Liuyun really leave to go look for the Jade Lake’s fairy?

He deserted her, left her in the small wooden house. Wasn’t it precisely because he wanted to look for the Jade Lake’s fairy?

Seeing the complicated mood on Su Luo’s face, Liu Ruohua was happy to the extreme. She covered her belly while laughing heartily. She was laughing so hard that she could barely breathe. “Su Luo, ah, Su Luo. Here I was under the impression that you had a lot of skills. After all, his highness Prince Jin was so loving towards you. You probably didn’t expect that you being favored would last for a mere two days. Ha, ha, ha —”

Su Luo only watched her laugh quietly, a secretive light appearing in her eyes. However it wasn't possible to see any changes on her face as it remained inscrutable.

Liu Ruohua had enough of laughing, turned towards Liu Weiming and said. "The Wild Serpent's inner core is still on her body. Shouldn't we take it back?"

Liu Weiming frowned slightly, a trace of hesitance flickering across his eyes. After awhile, he finally said, "Didn't she already swallow it?"

Liu Ruohua's face showed contempt for his idiocy while her eyes glared at Liu Weiming. "Are you stupid?! How can the inner core of the Wild Serpent be so easily digested? Maybe it's still in her digestive track undamaged and intact! Being uncertain, why not just cut open her belly and then we'll know for sure, right?"

Liu Weiming was somewhat hesitant. After all, previously his highness Prince Jin had displayed a very caring manner towards Su Luo.

Liu Ruohua let out a sneering laugh. "Don't you see? His highness Prince Jin has already abandoned her. Otherwise, why would his highness Prince Jin chase after the Jade Lake's fairy? Could it be that you think this slut can even be compared to the Jade Lake's fairy? If you were asked to choose, would you choose the precious, gloriously flowery fairy or this good-for-nothing? Don't tell me you feel that his highness Prince Jin's vision can't be compared to yours?"

Liu Ruohua's words coaxed at every step, penetrating deeply through

each layer of resistance.

Liu Weiming's expression had a frightful hidden depth. It issued a nebulous, deadly threatening air.

He was aware that Liu Ruohua wanted to avenge a personal grudge, so she was trying to bewitch him, but he was still unable to refuse.

The inner core of the Wild Serpent was indeed very important to him.

As long as he could get the inner core, he would have the opportunity to become the personal disciple of Grandmaster Lan Hai. In that case, his cultivation road in the future would have propitious wind throughout the journey (1) as compared to harsh challenges one after another.

A trace of a smile slowly emerged on Liu Weiming's face. It was an icy-cold and extremely dangerous smile.

The dagger he hid in his sleeves suddenly moved.

A trace of a sneer flashed through Su Luo's heart.

A bunch of idiots!

“What are you guys thinking of doing?!” Su Luo deliberately shouted out loudly and anxiously. “If his highness Prince Jin found out that you guys killed me, then he will never let you guys go!”

“Bragging like you have a tiger’s pelt and actually hoisting it as a banner!” Liu Ruohua measured her with a cold and threatening laugh. “His highness Prince Jin? First, let’s not even talk about whether or not his highness Prince Jin would seek revenge on your behalf. Granted, even if he wanted to avenge you, he won’t find you. Here in the Sunset Mountain Range is full of magical beasts. After the magical beasts have gnawed on your bones, I don’t know if his highness Prince Jin will even recognize that chunk of bones is you, Su Luo!”

“You guys——” Su Luo’s words had yet to be completed, when she felt a sinister human shadow already standing behind her back. The deeply cold handle of the dagger was headed towards her throat.

Assassin!

She would never have thought that Liu Weiming was like her, someone proficient in assassin techniques.

A very dangerous and icy-cold smile appeared on Su Luo’s face.

1) propitious wind throughout the journey – idiom: plain sailing; to go smoothly; have a nice trip!

Chapter 85 – The lovable, adorable, little dragon (1)

Liu Weiming could only watch as Su Luo's feet slid away, her entire body slipping from his hand like a mudfish. Before he could react, her figure was already ten meters away (1).

Liu Weiming's dagger promptly met with empty air.

A thread of surprise flashed through his eyes.

He could feel that Su Luo's body did not contain a shred of spiritual power. This was sufficient to illustrate that she was simply an ordinary person that could not be more common and a waste of space.

On the other hand, he, himself was already a third ranked mage.

However, his sneak attack actually did not succeed? This gave him a strong feeling of having been thwarted.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth evoked a smile that was nearly impossible to catch sight of.

She smiled coldly. With her feet not even touching the ground, Su Luo turned her body and just ran. She could feel that the battle between the divine dragon and the fire phoenix was over. Now, the divine dragon is free to chase after her again in order to kill her.

“If you have the ability then don’t run!” Liu Ruohua shouted then immediately gave chase!.

“If you have the ability then don’t chase!” Su Luo turned her head around and made a face at Liu Ruohua.

Telling her not to run, do they think that she was an idiot?

A strong killing intent flashed through Liu Weiming’s eyes.

If a moment ago he had not made a move, then the matter would be over. Since he had already attempted an attack, he must now complete the task and eliminate all evidence.

Otherwise, if Su Luo was to make sinister accusations in front of his highness Prince Jin later on, their lives would be forfeit.

Even though his highness Prince Jin had tossed her aside and left, God knows when the temperamental Prince Jin would change his mind and go look for her again?

At this moment, Liu Weiming eyes held a sinister blood-lust, overflowing with killing intent. The others watched as he ran so fast he seemed to be flying, tightly nipping at Su Luo’s heels. He followed her closely, not giving her a chance to escape.

Behind him, those four people without exception also chased after Su Luo to chip away at the task without abandoning it (2). Even if they were to die, they must behead her with their own blades.

The distance between the two parties become shorter by the second as the chasing party drew closer with each step... closer and closer...

“Hey, something is wrong——” Liu Weiming suddenly frowned. He sensed a dangerous atmosphere coming from behind them.

He turned his head to look and his complexion immediately became pale white as paper. Both of his legs went limp, making it nearly impossible for him to stand.

Seeing him like this, everyone turned their heads around to look——

“Heavens, oh heavens...is that, is that a snake type beast?”

“You stupid airhead, thinking that it’s a type of snake beast! That’s a dragon! A divine dragon!”

Once he said those words, everyone present stopped talking and were as silent as the dead.

A divine dragon that legend said could destroy a city with a stomp of its feet, the Venerable divine dragon!

It was simply too frightening.

Even more terrifying was the fact that the divine dragon, behind them, was tenaciously chasing after them. Its eyes were full of a violent hatred

and enmity as if they had stolen its child.

But what caused the Venerable divine dragon to even feel that they were worth chasing, let alone chasing them with intent to kill?

At this moment they simply did not have time to think, their brains just weren't functioning. They only knew to step forward and run, run, run

Each ran as fast as they possibly could.

If one of them could run past their companions, then that person would have a better chance of surviving.

At this time, everyone was incomparably disheveled and unkempt.

Running in front of them was Su Luo who was smiling with sinister treachery.

Since Liu Weiming and the divine dragon both wanted to kill her, in that case, let them first massacre each other. After the winner has been decided, the survivor could then seek her to battle it out.

Leading the trouble to the east (3), borrowing someone else's knife to kill another. These were tricks that Su Luo was most skilled at.

In any case, Liu Weiming and companions had sinister and very savage intentions. Regarding this matter, she didn't feel even a tiny bit of guilt.

Poor Liu Weiming and his companions who still didn't know that this divine dragon had been lured here.

If they only knew that as long as they ran separate from Su Luo, they would escape being chased by the menacing divine dragon.

However, people in times of danger will inevitably only have one thought: must firmly hold on to the target ahead and never let go.

As a result, this doomed them to a tragic play.

In contrast, Su Luo was very perceptive of human nature. She was certain that Liu Weiming and companions will make a move against her. Su Luo was also confident that they weren't aware that she had lured the divine dragon here. She was even more certain that when Liu Weiming and companions tried to escape the divine dragon, they would follow right behind her and become her protective shield.

1) The author used three zhang: 1 zhang = 10 Chinese foot (chi) or 3.3 meters

2) chip away at the task without abandoning it – to chisel away at sth; to persevere; unflagging efforts

3) Leading the trouble to the east – idiom: meaning redirecting the trouble onto someone else

Chapter 86 – The lovable, adorable, little dragon (2)

When it came to astute schemes or sophisticated shrewdness, Su Luo would absolutely not lose to anyone.

“Poof——” The divine dragon sprayed out a mouthful of Dragon’s Breath.

Dense black as ink fumes enveloped the few people running at the rear and covered them in a round sphere.

In the divine dragon’s eyes, these insignificant humans running together with Su Luo were her comrades, and they all deserved to die! She was afraid that by killing Su Luo she would hurt the little dragon, but in regards to these tiny ants she had no such misgivings.

Consequently, she did not control her Dragon’s Breath.

“Ahhh——” A desperate cry came from the group of people that had fallen behind.

It was uttered by a person from Liu Weiming’s team.

This youngster had a huge crush on Liu Ruohua, thus he was very amenable to her. However at the most critical moment when the Dragon’s Breath arrived, he gave Liu Ruohua a helping push, whereas Liu Ruohua had simultaneously pushed him towards the back. She took this opportunity to escape——

This youngster's face was full of despair as he got caught up within the Dragon's Breath. He watched with an incredulous face as Liu Ruohua's back became ever more distant. His eyes were full of surprise.

He would never have thought, that he, who gave Liu Ruohua a helping hand, would have been pushed back by such an opportunistic Liu Ruohua....

Even as he died he still couldn't understand, why did she do it....

This was just human nature!

Selfish and cold-blooded, forgetful of favors and violators of justice (1) that bite the hands that feed them!

This originally was a team of six people; however, in the beginning, a person had died because of the Wild Serpent. Now another had been killed by the divine dragon, so now there were only four people left in the team.

The captain Liu Weiming, Liu Ruohua, Li Wan, and another youngster.

The divine dragon kept getting closer, as if it was almost within a hand's reach—

“Ahhhh—” Another tragic cry sounded out.

It was that of yet another youngster being consumed by the divine dragon's wrath in one mouthful, leaving not even a scrap behind.

Su Luo was flying and running at lightning speed, but even she was unable to keep her heart from trembling.

As she turned to see each and everyone of the human meatshields behind her about to be swallowed, she could only dread when it would be her turn.

“Let's split up and run! Otherwise, we'll all die!” Liu Weiming was worthy of being named captain, for once he calmed down, he very quickly found the only solution.

There was only one divine dragon, so as long as everyone scattered in all four directions, then at least three of the people could have a chance of escape.

Liu Weiming sent Su Luo a quick glare full of hatred. He knew, Su Luo must die within Sunset Mountain Range. If she was to walk out alive, Heaven knows how his highness Prince Jin will deal with them once he learned the news that they had wanted to kill her.

Even if they died, they wouldn't want his highness Prince Jin as an enemy.

Therefore the best way was to get someone else to do his dirty work. He was going to borrow the might of the divine dragon to eradicate Su Luo!

Having thought about this point, Liu Weiming, Liu Ruohua, and Li Wan exchanged glances. He made a hand gesture, consequently all three darted toward three different directions.

She had no choice but to say Liu Weiming's method was truly correct. He had succeeded by a lucky stroke, and saved his own life and maybe even the lives of Liu Ruohua and Li Wan.

Watching as those three people scattered, Su Luo's heart had a sense of loss. Alas, the human shaped meatshields were gone.

Now her only hope was placed on the body of the adorable little dragon.

The divine dragon gave chase and was getting closer and closer. Finally it cornered Su Luo at the base of an overhanging cliff.

Three sides were sheer cliffs and a precipitous walls of rock. There were absolutely no routes of escape.

Su Luo raised both of her hands, turned around. Her face had a very flattering smile, "Heya, Venerable divine dragon, are you tired? Would you like to rest a bit?"

The divine dragon's malevolently fierce face flashed, an unsympathetic and ice-cold pair of eyes had brought the atmosphere to a subzero temperature. It was fixated on Su Luo as if watching a dead person.

It looked everywhere around Su Luo's body but was surprised when she

couldn't find her little treasured baby. In a short while she became furious.

Do not, do not, do not——” Su Luo was so anxious that she was sweating.

1) forgetful of favors and violate justice – idiom: ingratitude to a friend; to kick a benefactor in the teeth

Chapter 87 – The lovable, adorable, little dragon (3)

She continuously called out to the adorable little dragon with her mind. She shouted mentally until her brain almost cramped up.

However, the adorable little dragon continued to lie firmly on its belly beside the spirit spring. Its little face looked up, showing a pair of large winsome eyes with crocodile tears flowing down its face. It gave Su Luo a pitiful and wretched expression as if she had caused it to feel aggrieved.

Within the space, Su Luo's spirit form glared at the little dragon with a fierce expression. "If you don't come out now, your mother dragon will kill me with one spray of Dragon's Breath! At that time you will also die! Let's play this game together!"

She could not understand. Clearly on the other side was its birth mother, but the little dragon incorrectly kept looking at her and would not leave the space.

Could it be that its own family was not as appealing as someone else's family? No wonder some kids, for whom exotic delicacies were the norm in their own family homes, preferred to eat ordinary vegetables dishes from other families.

The adorable little dragon continued to use those pitiful eyes to look at Su Luo.

Su Luo faked a fierce appearance and single-handedly picked up the adorable little dragon preparing to return it.

But, both of the adorable little dragon's paws had a death grip on the edge of the spirit spring and refused to let go. Crocodile tears were falling from its eyes, as if to say that Su Luo was a human trafficker who kidnapped and sold children!

Su Luo propped up her head with one hand. Whose family did this spoiled child really belong to? Please come and quickly carry it home because she couldn't afford to raise it.

She merely want to return the little dragon to its original owner, so what was so wrong with that? The little dragon was making it seem as if she was sending it to the execution block.

Finally, Su Luo was left without any other option. If the little dragon didn't show its face now, the divine dragon will definitely kill her with a mouthful of Dragon's Breath.

As a result, Su Luo cajoled the little dragon using a gentle tone and displayed a friendly appearance. She clenched her teeth, put on a warm, tender smile and said. "How about I fill a large bucket with the spirit spring and you can take it home with you?"

The adorable little dragon shook its head. "..." That wouldn't be nearly enough...

Su Luo was frustrated, but she, once again, put on a coaxing smile and said. "Then how about...let's first go greet your mother dragon and politely ask about her health, okay? After all, she has not seen you since you hatched."

The adorable little dragon shook its head. “” It was certain it would be carried away!

Su Luo only felt the space between her eyebrows burst with aggravation. Finally, she gave a secretive calculating smile and quickly picked up the adorable little dragon. “You think I won’t be able to pick you up? Harumph, humph!”

It came to Su Luo that within her space, she was the boss!

When the adorable little dragon was lifted out of her space and appeared in her arms, the divine dragon had been in the midst of brewing a second Dragon’s Breath.

“Your eminence, hurry and take it back.” Su Luo cupped the adorable little dragon with both hands and hastily rushed forward to give it back.

She placed the adorable little dragon on the ground and motioned the little guy to hurry up and pay its respect.

It should be said that the divine dragon had also suffered bitterly. After many trials and tribulations she birthed the egg then had to incubate it for a long time. Once the adorable little dragon was born, in spite of everything it refused to go home. It forced this new mother to chase after it and had succeeded in embarrassing her to death.

The adorable little dragon, with wobbled and swaying steps, turned its head back every step and shuffled to the front of the divine dragon.

The angry mother dragon used a water bucket-sized forefinger and poked its head causing the adorable little dragon to bend over like a roly poly and, with a loud thumping sound, fall backwards.

That sight was comically funny and laughable, such that Su Luo almost laughed out loud.

However, the divine dragon just indifferently swept her eyes toward Su Luo.

That expression was cold as ice, and a frosty air started to climb up from the soles of her feet. All at once, Su Luo could not laugh anymore.

The eyes of the divine dragon contained an endless killing intent, and its ferocious expression gave off a violently irate mood. It was about to let loose a wave of Dragon's Breath towards Su Luo.

However just at this time, the adorable little dragon clutched at the divine dragon's finger and followed the path up its arm, wobbling and swaying as it climbed up. Finally its tiny buttocks sat on top of the divine dragon's nose, cleanly dispersing the Dragon's Breath its mother was brewing.

In that moment, the divine dragon and the adorable little dragon had an appearance of mutual affection for one another, of a mother and child.

Su Luo's heart moved. If she didn't leave now then what was she waiting for?

If the divine dragon discovered that the adorable little dragon and her had formed a contract, she's afraid it would squash her to death with one slap of its claws.

Hence, Su Luo walked quietly on the tips of her toe and retreated a few steps. After she had made some ground, she turned her body around and stealthily slipped away.

Chapter 88 – To come back from death's door (1)

Su Luo walked cautiously through the mountain range, hoping to find a way out.

Right now her strength was very low, and she wouldn't dare indiscriminately dash around everywhere, bumping into things. As a result she was very careful while making her way along the roads.

She had already accomplished her goal for entering this mountain range. Although the process was very thrilling, her luck had been exceptionally good. There had been plenty of unforeseen perils and no shortage of danger. Not only had her space opened, she had also formed a contract of equals with the little divine dragon by a sheer accident among many implausible causes.

However it was a pity, that the little divine dragon had been carried home by its mother dragon.

Su Luo sighed, slowly searched for a path to leave the mountains. However what she did not know was, that on the other side, Nangong Liuyun was about to go mad in his search for her.

Nangong Liuyun's face was pale and unwaveringly fixed on the trunk of the thousand year old ancient tree. His tightly clenched fist was blanched white!

The ancient tree stood as before, but the wooden house that had been on the top had disappeared without a trace. For Nangong, it was as if

someone had walked away, taking with them even the pots and pans, without even leaving a speck behind.

As Nangong Liuyun stared rigidly at that thousand year old ancient tree, his eyes were ruthless, tyrannical and cold enough to freeze everything within his gaze. On his handsome face that was normally nefarious and devilishly charming, something had changed. Now his face was a wave of astral frost. His stare was violent like that of a wild beast's and filled with a cruel bloodlust.

Nangong Liuyun could only feel a sharp pain bursting from the area near his heart. The ache was so painful that he almost suffocated.

By his side, stood an exquisitely beautiful woman that was elegant and quiet, seemingly above the common populace.

She was dressed from head to toe in only a snowy white gown. A graceful neck, a slender waist, and, just below, a skirt that seemed to flow with the breeze, as if wishing to transform into a beautiful wisp then disappear like snow melting into spring.

This person was not a stranger. She was none other than the rumored Jade Lake's fairy.

In a deeply concerned manner, the Jade Lake's fairy placed her hand on Nanong Liuyun who was kneeling on the ground. Her red full lips gently and humbly stated. "Third senior brother (1), it's all Yao Yao's fault. Imposing on you until you sustained injuries, and also tiring you out until Miss Su disappear without a trace...."

Nangong Liuyun's complexion was like a sheet of ice. He hadn't spoken a word, but his eyes were full of self-loathing and guilt.

All of a sudden, he severely slapped himself hard, quickly followed by another slap!

The strength his hands used could frighten people, and with only these two slaps, he was able to make himself vomit blood.

"Third senior brother!" A thread of anguish flashed across Jade Lake's fairy's eyes. She hurriedly pulled at his hands to prevent him from doing further harm to himself.

"It's all my fault! If I didn't leave her, she wouldn't be..." A thread of tormented pain flashed across Nangong Liuyun's handsome face which had lost all of its original devilish charm. His strained voice hinted that he was being choked by his own emotions.

What happened here? How could Luo girl have disappeared? It was all his fault. He shouldn't have abandoned her in that moment of peril. If he didn't abandoned her, how could this have had a chance to occur!?!?

In the midst of blaming himself, Nangong Liuyun ruthlessly smashed his clenched fist towards the trunk of that thousand year old ancient tree.

The ancient tree, which had a width equivalent to ten people that were wrapped arm in arm, fell to the ground with a bang. A large cloud of dust rose concluding its thousand year lifespan.

A trace of complex emotion crossed through the eyes of the Jade Lake's fairy. Her cloudy eyes were like a sublime mist, partitioning the darkness in the innermost part of her heart. She held a deeply concerned expression on her face as she said to him, "third senior brother. Don't worry too much. Who knows what happened to Miss Su? Maybe even now she is having a fortuitous meeting?"

"You don't understand. She doesn't any spirit strength in her body." A touch of despair passed through Nangong Liuyun's eyes.

His Luo girl absolutely do not know how to harness spirit power. Alone and being left behind, how could she survive in this Sunset Mountain Range when the entirety of its length and breath was filled with wild beasts? Maybe even now...Every time he thought about it, Nangong Liuyun would feel waves of tormenting pain gripping his heart.

"This won't do! I must go look for her now!" Nangong Liuyun struggled to stand up because of insufficient strength he almost fell.

The Jade Lake's fairy saw Nangong Liuyun's body faintly tremble, as if he could not even stand; but he still insisted on going to search for Su Luo. She was almost unable to conceal the complicated expression in her eyes

1) Third senior brother – Chinese literal translation is third brother from the same teacher. Students under the same teacher can call each other brothers, sisters etc. often seen in martial art sect.

Chapter 89 – To come back from death's door (2)

The Jade Lake's fairy pulled on Nangong Liuyun who was the tottering on the verge of collapse. Her beautiful eyes moving cleverly around, her voice sounded justifiable and honest as she said. "Third senior brother, looking at how badly injured you are, how can you go search for her? Even if you could find her, if she really was in danger, would you be able to save her?"

The Jade Lake Fairy's words were reasonable and irrefutable. She had hit the nail on the head.

Nangong Liuyun truly had suffered severe injuries.

In order to save the Jade Lake's fairy, his abdomen had been slashed heavily by the king vulture's claws and had bled profusely. Once he was able to finally stop the bleeding, Nangong Liuyun had rushed here to look for Su Luo, only to find that she had disappeared.

"Third senior brother, right now your first priority is to recover from your wounds." The Jade Lake's fairy gazed at him in concern, "Believe in me, okay? I'll send people to look for her right now. I trust they'll find this Miss Su and bring her back quickly."

Nangon Liuyun struggled to get up, his wounds that he had worked so hard to close had re-opened. Suddenly, fresh blood spurted from the wounds like spring water wildly rushing forward.

Due to excessive blood loss, Nangon Liuyun's lips had turned white as

paper while his face displayed a haggard appearance.

Nangong Liuyun firmly grabbed the hand of the Jade Lake's fairy. Although weak, he maintained his dignified manner and very seriously stated. "We must find her!"

"Okay." The Jade Lake Fairy squeezed out a smile and solemnly nodded her head.

Even Nangong Liuyun failed to notice the flash of frost that passed through her eyes.

After he finished speaking, Nangong Liuyun sat down cross-legged and began exercising his powers to heal himself. He needed to nurse his body back to full health, his Luo girl was still waiting for him somewhere.

The Jade Lake's fairy had successfully appeased Nangong Liuyun. Seeing him begin the healing process, her beautiful watery eyes showed a look of deep anticipation while her red lips displayed a slight superficial smile.

Then, she turned to leave.

Beside a cliff covered with a bottomless drop covered in dense fog.

The magnificent Jade Fairy stood on the edge of the cliff. Her long hair which flowed down to her ankles was dancing in the wind, giving the illusion that she was on the verge of taking flight, like a fairy. However, at this time, she had an indifferent and icy expression on her face.

Behind her stood a row of four young women led by a woman named Qin Ning. Qin Ning was the magnificent Jade Fairy's most trusted attendant.

The magnificent Jade Fairy's beautiful, simple, and neat face had a shallow smile, "Did all of you hear third senior brother's words? Now, the only task for you is to look for this Miss Su."

Qin Ning's reply was very direct. Glancing at the magnificent Jade Fairy's beautiful, cold, and expressionless face, she murmured. "Yes."

"Remember, if still alive, I must see the person. If dead, I must see the corpse." The magnificent Jade Fairy unhurriedly spit out those words while stressing the last four. She continued to smile gently and gorgeously as before, so otherworldly beautiful that just a glance could drive all living things mad.

Qin Ning had grown up together with the magnificent Jade Fairy, so once she heard the words she immediately understood their hidden meaning.

A barely perceivable treacherous chill flashed in Qin Ning's eyes as she responded. "This servant will not fail to comply with the Young Mistress's command, if living then must see the person, if dead then must see the corpse!"

The master and servant simultaneously laughed together, with mutual understanding.

Qin Ning led the other three people and quickly walked away while sneering in her heart endlessly.

A toad that wants to eat swan flesh! An insignificant idiotic girl dares to try to snatch a guy away from the Young Mistress. Is she looking to court her own death?

That little slut! If she is dead, then it was over. If she wasn't dead, hehe, when the time comes, they will torment that slut until she wished she was dead. They will make her regret that she was ever born into this world.

Qin Ning and the three women flew through the mountain range, following the crushed plants while flying as fast as lightning.

When the divine dragon had previously chased after Su Luo, it had left behind a trail of destruction, making the route fairly obvious.

Qin Ning moved along this road, continuously searching.

Qin Ning and companions were rather lucky as they soon ran into Liu Ruohua.

Chapter 91 - To come back from death's door (3)

Qin Ning knew that Liu Ruohua had been with Su Luo before. After a little bit of questioning, she discovered that Su Luo had indeed been lucky enough to survive. She had even escaped from that tornado!

Qin Ning gave her a sly and cold smile. It looks like their moment to earn some merit from the young princess was finally here.

As a result of the directions provided by Liu Rouhua, Qin Ning was able to retrace the path that Su Luo had used when fleeing for her life. She was determined to hunt this Su Luo down. .

Su Luo still didn't know that Qin Ning had brought people to chase after her with the intent to kill. Right now she was in the middle of cooking a few stolen magical beast's eggs over an open fire.

During this entire afternoon, she had been constantly running away from those who wanted to kill her. Because of this, she had consumed a huge amount of her stamina; therefore she had to fill her stomach first. Besides, in this Sunset Mountain Range, who knew when her next meal would be at.

Her journey's bitter experiences, after entering Sunset Mountain Range, made Su Luo realize that, in this world, strength was the most important thing to have. So she urgently needed to find a peaceful place to start her cultivation practices.

Seeing her dual wood and fire elements encircling her body, Su Luo bit

off a mouthful of magical beast's egg. Her heart was elated, she planned to find some basic wood, fire element books to practice with after leaving this place.

Suddenly, Su Luo's hand that was holding the magical beast egg paused, a feeling of impending crisis assailed her thoughts.

She had spent her entire previous life working as an assassin, so naturally Su Luo was most sensitive to this kind of murderous intent.

She was absolutely sure she was not wrong about this!

This was not the killing intent emitted by a magical beast but from a person!

Su Luo saw the other few eggs still being cooked, without even having to think she picked them up and threw them into her space. She immediately headed into the forest and slipped away very quickly.

Su Luo ran in a hurry for a full four hours (1). When she finally stopped, she quickly hid behind a sheer cliff.

Now the sky had gradually darken towards night, the moon was casting its hazy shadow.

Su Luo slowed down and quieted her breathing, she also slowed down her heartbeat. Her entire person was hidden in darkness blending in with the cliff within the dark night.

Even master martial artist wouldn't be able to distinguish her from the face of the cliff.

At that very moment, a maiden seemed to fly over from afar. Her clothes was white like snow, with a simple and neat appearance, a light blue-colored diaphanous outer layer covering her clothing. Her body gave off an exceedingly refined manner.

Su Luo recognized her. She was not a stranger but one of the maids standing by the Jade Lake's fairy's side.

Su Luo had an excellent memory. As long as she saw them before, even after a few years, she would be able to recognize them at once. This was especially true for someone she meet only half a day ago.

“Su Luo, I know you are over there, come out, no need to hide.” This person was called Cui Yu, her call was cold and devoid of any mercy. In the darkness of the night, it conjured up quite a horrifying feeling.

Su Luo sneered in her mind: if she really knew where Su Luo was then why was she still looking around in all directions?

How could this be considered knowing where she was?

Was she underestimating her as a good-for-nothing greenhorn who knows nothing?

However, Su Luo thought this was odd. Why had this maid come looking for her? And also why was she carrying a strong killing intent on her body?

Was it because....

Su Luo thought of a possibility.

That kind of person, clear as ice and clean as jade (2), a woman seemingly not profaned by the worldly dust. Would she actually order her underlings to kill her? Although it was unreasonable, it was also not impossible.

Ke Nan (3) said it best, to rule out everything that was impossible, then the remaining reason must be the truth, no matter how crazy it sounded.

It seem that the Jade Lake's fairy....was also human!

She originally thought that she was so temperate, so lofty and unsoiled, so exceedingly refined, and so above the common people. But as it turned out she was also a woman that would go frantically crazy over a man.

Su Luo's heart smiled coldly.

She must capture this girl and confirm her own guess, so she can determine who her her real enemy was.

She, Su Luo was never a person to sit and wait for death, if others want

to kill her then they must pay with their lives!

Su Luo motionlessly hid somewhere below the cliff.

Waiting for Cui Yu to get closer.

1) Chinese divided our modern 24 hours cycle into 12 shichen. So 1 shichen = 2 hours. Su Luo ran 2 shichen here. So from now on I'll just calculate the time without mentioning the shichen.

2) clear as ice and clean as jade – idiom: spotless, irreproachable, incorruptible

3) Ke Nan – is the Chinese name for detective Conan from the Japanese anime/manga Meitantei Conan otherwise known in America as Case Closed. Thank you readers for pointing out that Ke Nan or Conan is the middle name of Sir Arthur Ignatius Conan Doyle author of Sherlock Holmes original source of this quote and inspiration for the anime/Manga. Pretty sure the author was referring to Case Closed.

Chapter 91 - To come back from death's door (4)

Suddenly!

In the darkness of the night, the silvery tip of a dagger shined brightly. Su Luo's body shifted as quick as lightning and within seconds had already arrived at Cui Yu's back. Su Luo's half broken dagger was wielded with deadly aim towards Cui Yu's throat.

Su Luo's movements were precise and nimble, merciless and blood-thirsty, there wasn't a single wasted motion.

Cui Yu proved to be a second ranked martial artist. She sensed danger approaching and slid to the left while attempting to stab the person behind with her sword.

However, she was already a step too late.

While Cui Yu was leaning left to avoid the dagger aimed at her throat, Su Luo had already anticipated Cui Yu's actions and had moved the dagger there in advance. Therefore, when Cui Yu leaned to the left, she ran directly into the dagger.

A "Sshhluck!—" sound lightly echoed and a stream of blood rushed out like spring water

"Ahhhh—" Cui Yu did not die immediately, but the pain caused her to roll around on the ground.

The instant kill failed because Su Luo's dagger had lost half of its effectiveness. Half of the dagger had been chewed off by the adorable little dragon previously, therefore it was not sharp enough to kill Cui Yu instantly.

Su Luo coldly watched Cui Yu rolling around on the ground in pain and quietly asked, "Why are you trying to kill me?"

"You must die!" Cui Yu's facial features were malevolent, her expression twisted, but her chin was still unbending and arrogantly raised.

"Just tell me the truth and I'll release you from your suffering. How do you feel about this deal?" Su Luo said with a bargaining tone as she squatted down and gave Cui Yu a smile that didn't reach her eyes.

Cui Yu coldly turned her face away, not paying any attention to Su Luo's threats.

In Cui Yu's eyes, Su Luo was just an ant. She would never admit that Su Luo was stronger than her.

"Very courageous of you!" Su Luo pulled out the blood encrusted, half-broken dagger. Her smile was genial, like a warm breeze. It did not contain even a hint of anger. "As you already know, my dagger is very dull. It can't kill a person in one strike."

"Humph." Cui Yun firmly spat out.

“Very good! I admire your courageous spirit. I hope you can keep it up as we continue.” Su Luo’s face held a faint yet sly smile. She smiled with ease while the dagger mercilessly zoomed towards Cui Yu’s finger.

A finger was forcibly cut off.

“Ahhh——” Cui Yu was in so much pain that her tears and mucus flowed out together. The agony almost made her pass out.

Without waiting for Cui Yu to speak, the second finger was quickly severed and went flying off.

The third finger....

“I’ll talk! I’ll talk!” A trace of startled surprise flashed through Cui Yu’s eyes.

She did not understand. Even though Cui Yu is a practitioner of martial arts, she would not be able to use such a cruel method. How was Su Luo able to do it so skillfully and with such a gentle and soft smile, at that?

It was as if what she was slicing off were not fingers but pieces of bread.

This person was simply a monster!

“You need not be so anxious. I haven’t completely chopped them all off yet.” Su Luo gestured with her hand as if to say she still wished to continue cutting off more.

Cui Yu reluctantly but loudly said, “It was the Young Mistress that told us to kill you! For every grievance, someone is responsible. For every debt, there is a debtor. If you have the ability, then go look for the Young Mistress to seek your revenge!”

“Why would she want to kill me?” As expected, it was the Jade Lake’s fairy who wanted to kill her.

Cui Yu stared at Su Luo as if looking at an idiot. “Do you really not understand? Our Young Mistress from when she was little until now is deeply attached to his highness Prince Jin! They grew up together and since childhood, their mutual affection was unlike others! In everyone’s eyes, the Young Mistress and Prince Jin was like a pair of Jade Annulus. As for you, his highness Prince Jin actually kissed you. Therefore, you can not be forgiven.”

“Just because he kissed me, thus your Jade Lake’s fairy wants to kill me?” Su Luo coldly smiled. Her guess was indeed correct.

“Yes! Because his highness Prince Jin does not allow others to get close to him. The only person who can even touch him is our Young Mistress! Now, there is a third wheel and that is you. Therefore, you must die!”

Chapter 92 - To come back from death's door (5)

“So it’s like that.” A thread of frost appeared in Su Luo’s eyes, and a barely visible smile rose from the corner of her mouth.

What bullshit title, ‘fairy’. More like ‘exceedingly refined’ cow dung; what ‘being above the common populace’s dirty emotions’, they were all a bunch of dog shit!

Nangong Liuyun was so stupid, that it made her want to laugh. He always bragged about being highly intelligent, but was unable to see clearly that the woman by his side had the heart of a snake and the methods of a scorpion.

“What about Nangong Liuyun? How is he right now?” A hidden meaning passed through Su Luo’s huge eyes, which sparkled and were translucent like jade. The corner of her mouth had a faintly mocking expression.

“His highness Prince Jin and our Young Mistress are together!” These words were correct but Cui Yu had not told the whole truth.

Su Luo nodded her head.

Nangong Liuyun, when you saw that the little treehouse had been wiped out, was your heart able to feel guilt and remorse?

Being you were unsure of whether I am dead or alive, were you

worried?

Why was it that the one that was looking for me is not you?

So once you have your Jade Lake's fairy, do I no longer matter to you?

If I think about it this way, then the vow you previously made to me - and all that you said-are really laughable.

As expected. If ever she depended on a mountain for support, then the mountain would collapsed. If she leaned on a person, the person would run away. People ah...she could only rely on herself.

Su Luo's pair of eyes were like water, but she had an icy-cold expression that was intent on hearing the truth, "Talk, how many people did your Jade Lake's fairy send out to kill me?"

Since they were already dispatched, the Jade Lake's fairy wanted to completely eliminate her. It seemed like this time, she really was surrounded by perils. It was extremely dangerous.

Su Luo didn't know what was wrong with her. Could it be because her character was lacking?

It had only been half a day, yet she had already encountered three cases of being chased by groups trying to kill her.

She felt as if she should personally visit a temple and burn a stick of

incense, pay respect to Buddha, or do anything to try and get rid of this rotten fortune. She simply had the worst luck.

However, Cui Yu face's became unresponsive, and she turned her head away.

“Don't want to talk? Very good, extremely good.” A sinister sneer appeared in Su Luo's eyes.

Right now Su Luo's mood was really gloomy, and here was a person not afraid of death, delivering herself for Su Luo to vent on. This was really the only good thing going for her at the moment .

Without as much as a hint of hesitation, her dagger directly chopped down!

“Ahhhh—My hand—” Cui Yu could only see that her entire wrist had been cut off with blood pouring out and spraying madly everywhere.

“You—”

She hadn't even finished when Su Luo's dagger chopped down again!

“Ahhhhh—”

Cui Yu's other hand was also severed, blood similarly madly rushed forth.

“I’ll talk.....I’ll talk!” Cui Yu was in so much pain that she almost died. Her complexion was as pale as paper, and cold sweat was falling down like rain.

“Actually, you can still wait for a moment.” Su Luo’s smile was as friendly as a warm breeze, but in Cui Yu’s eyes, she was like a demon from Asura’s Hell, with an expression full of a terrible sinister intent.

“Apart from me, there are three other people.” Cui Yi was in so much agony that she could only grasp roughly for air. Her eyes unwaveringly glared at Su Luo, full of fierce, malicious curses. “Everyone of their strength is stronger than mine, and they definitely will avenge me!!!”

“Really? Then let’s just wait and see.” Su Luo stood up, towering above her and disdainfully looked down at her. “Upon the fact that you revealed everything. I’ll give you a chance, finish yourself off.”

“No——” Cui Yu desperately shook her head, at the moment when she was really at death’s door. She finally become aware that she really will forever depart from this world.

Afterwards, there won’t be any breaths, won’t be able to smell the air, won’t be able to open her eyes again...Blue sky, white clouds, she won’t be able to see anything anymore.

“If I was to do it, I’m afraid I won’t be able to help but to slice off your flesh piece by piece from your body.” Su Luo indifferently looked at her own hands, smilingly said. “I have yet to kill a person, don’t want to dirty my hands because of you.”

“You——” Cui Yu was very wrathful, but she thought about Su Luo’s ruthless methods, so she closed her eyes and furiously flung herself head-first to a nearby rock.

Chapter 93 - To come back from death's door (6)

Bang...The sound resounded, Cui Yu's head cracked open. She immediately died and couldn't have been more dead.

“It was you who committed suicide, I certainly did not make a move to kill you.” Su Luo smiled while showing off her snowy white teeth.

After that, she quickly began to clean up any traces that may be left behind.

Wasting no less than one hour, she had erased all traces. Then, she advanced deep into the mountains.

She knew that the Jade Lake's fairy wanted to kill her, so she only had three possible roads she could take.

One way was to avoid the Jade Lake's fairy and find Nangong Liuyun.

The Jade Lake's fairy wouldn't dare to kill her in front of Nangong Liuyun, but this method had a high degree of difficulty. In addition, she really didn't want to see him right now.

The second way was to hide deep within this mountainous ancient forest, making sure that the other side could never find her.

As for the third way, it was to kill everyone that the Jade Lake's fairy

had sent after her.

However that last option, with regards to the current Su Luo, was too unrealistic.

The towering, majestic mountains extended endlessly into the distance.

Su Luo continuously dove into the forests of the deep mountain. Along the way, she carefully erased any trace of her passing, hoping she would not be found by the other side.

She walked for about two hours, when a sense of danger assaulted her mind. Su Luo now had a tingling feeling along her back.

She knew, she was being followed by someone.

Also the person this time, like Cui Yu had said, had martial arts that were at a much higher level than Cui Yu's.

Su Luo hid deep within the ancient trees, and coldly looked towards the front.

There was a woman wearing a light yellow-colored slip over her garments. Her breath was stronger than Cui Yu's, so she was probably a third ranked martial artist.

Su Luo was able to kill Cui Yu because of her sneak attack, but this person was already at the third rank. This time, it would be difficult to

handle!

Su Luo blended herself into the night, as much as possible, reducing her presence.

However.

All of a sudden, she could only see this maiden called Er Huang smile coldly. Subsequently, she directly came at Su Luo with an attack.

She had actually been discovered!

The strength in that sword strike was not something Su Luo could block right now.

Su Luo dropped to the ground and rolled away, evading that fatal attack.

Right after, she lengthened her steps and dashed ahead.

Su Luo knew that if she was to fight one on one, this person could easily and effortlessly knock her out.

The current her could only evade and hide.

Su Luo saw the creeper vine in the forest, and her heart rejoiced. She lifted up the creeper vine and entered a secret hidden cave.

The cave was very narrow, with only a square meter of space. Su Luo's back pressed up against the cave's wall. She controlled her breathing and suppressed her heartbeat to its lowest speed, like a cold-blooded animal during hibernation. It could be sensed that she only had a trace of presence.

Through the creeper vine, Su Luo's eyes narrowed into a slit. At the same time, her heart was full of wrath.

Jade Lake's fairy, if you want a man, don't you know how to win him over by yourself? What kind of ability is it to kill an outsider like her!?!?

Su Luo clenched her fist firmly, a furious intent flashing through her eyes. She vowed to wait until her strength rose. She would absolutely balance this account and properly return the compliment!

However, right now, Su Luo could only rage inside and endure it silently.

However, her attempt to forbear was too late.

Because her emotions had been too stirred up, therefore, her vitality rose too vigorously. Consequently, that Er Huang maiden was finally able to detect a thread of difference.

Seeing that the sword was about to strike towards her with a killing intent, Su Luo rolled on the ground, rushing out and leaving the small cave.

She managed to escape this time's extremely close and thrilling death chase.

However, a good thing didn't last forever. Very quickly, halfway on the road, Su Luo again detected that she had been locked on by Er Huang!

This indeed, was the soul of the deceased having not dispersed (1)!

Su Luo hid herself in a swamp. Her entire body was buried in the muddy ooze. She was covered in dried up decomposing tree leaves, with only a pair of eyes exposed at the surface.

She stopped her breathing, and wished that this time she could escape.

However, this Er Huang maiden stood at the edge of the swamp. There was an unkind fury on her face, like that of someone who had long endured, but was still unable to catch that person.

1) the soul of the deceased having not dispersed – idiom: figuratively meaning the influence still lingers on; the spirit (of some doctrine) is still alive.

Chapter 94 – To come back from death's door (7)

Every time Er Huang was close to catching Su Luo, the opponent's movements would resemble a mud fish and slip through her fingers. Su Luo took advantage of her every careless mistake to escape, causing Er Huang to become extremely frustrated and unhappy!

Just like now, right when Er Huang was about to lock onto Su Luo, Su Luo's entire person once again seemed to have disappeared without a trace.

Er Huang vented her anger by launching sword attacks at the swamp, the tip of her double-edged sword sparkled with golden lightning as it flipped endless pieces of mud into the sky.

Within the sword tip, spirit strength accumulated. The light that came from the sword strike was strong enough to take a life.

“Whoosh—” A band of golden rays flashed by Su Luo's right side, striking her right arm. Su Luo felt a sudden acute pain. It was so agonizing that cold sweat broke out on her face.

At that instant, Su Luo was under the impression that her right arm had been severed.

It took another two hours before Er Huang's deranged venting of her fury had finally ended.

Su Luo clenched her teeth while crawling out of the swamp. Her right arm was drenched in blood, the intense pain almost made her pass out.

The magnificent Jade Fairy, you did well! This hatred has been engraved into my heart!

Su Luo dragged her exhausted body forward until she found a creek to wash clean her wound. At the same time, she also washed her clothes that were covered with mud.

Due to excessive blood loss, Su Luo felt that her head was spinning, her vision was becoming blurry, and her body was about to faint. She inwardly cried about the hardships in her heart. Right now, she really could not run anymore. If things continued this way, sooner or later, she would be captured by Er Huang.

Suddenly, a light bulb went off in her head, as Su Luo remembered that she had her own treasured space.

Although there was nothing in the space, it still contained the spirit spring. This spirit spring was a sacred commodity that had the ability to heal.

Su Luo cupped her hands, drew the water from her space, and drank. The spirit spring water was like ambrosial nectar; rich, mellow, and full-bodied. Its pure aroma enticed and beckoned.

Su Luo's previous weak mental state became a lot stronger. Her thought processes recovered completely and she no longer felt dizzy.

After drinking her fill, Su Luo again withdrew a handful of water and sprinkled it on her wounds.

Although the wounds were not healed immediately, the bleeding slowly stopped.

Su Luo released a sigh of relief. At long last, she had come back from death's door. She had survived.

However, before Su Luo could complete her sigh of relief, she suddenly felt danger approaching from behind.

Su Luo rolled on the ground and avoided a vicious sword strike.

The attacker was not Er Huang but Nen Lu.

She was among the four people that were chasing Su Luo with the intent to kill.

“Vile girl, so you were hiding here, causing your mother to search for you for a long time! Eat my sword!” Without saying another word, Nen Lu directly thrust her sword at Su Luo.

The long double-edged sword became numerous rays of light. In a manner of hiding the sky and covering the earth (1), it launched towards Su Luo.

Momentarily, an unnatural gale which was not caused by the weather erupted.

Su Luo simply could not deflect the attack, she could only rely on her speed to dodge.

However, her body had suffered a severe injury and had also lost a large amount of blood, so she wasn't as nimble as before.

“Slash——”Su Luo was too slow to dodge, so she was hit with a piercing blow by the double-edged sword. The sharp pain that exploded almost made her faint on the spot. The wound that she had with great difficulty stopped from bleeding, once again burst open.

Overwhelming pain washed over her.

Su Luo clenched her teeth. She bit her bottom lip so hard that blood began to seep out.

Su Luo could not fall. If she fell down now, she would definitely die!

In front of her was an overhanging cliff. The drop from the cliff was deep, so deep that you could not see the bottom. It was also surrounded by heavy fog.

Su Luo's eyes flashed with relentless determination!

Even if she were to die, she will pull the other person down with her!

However, Su Luo did fall down....

She weakly fell to the ground, motionless as if she had died. Her body lacked even the tiniest sign of life.

A cold smile appeared in Nen Lu's eyes. She walked to Su Luo's body, crouched down, and sneered. "Little slut, you have the impertinence to seduce his highness Prince Jin. Even if you die a hundred times it won't be enough! Rest assured and go. His highness Prince Jin will be well looked after by our Young Mistress."

After saying this, she hoisted up Su Luo's corpse and quickly threw it over the cliff's edge.

Big sister Qin Ning had said before: destroy not only the corpse, but also the evidence.

However, at this moment, misfortune unexpectedly occurred.

1) hiding the sky and covering the earth – idiom: figuratively meaning earth-shattering; omnipresent; of universal importance

Chapter 95 – To search for hidden treasures (1)

When she hoisted up Su Luo's corpse, an ice-cold, cruel smile could be seen at the corner of Su Luo's mouth.

She twisted her body around and grabbed onto Nen Lu's sleeves, placing her entire weight on Nen Lu's shoulders. Her body was hanging upside down, with her head facing the ground. That broken dagger ruthlessly stabbed towards Nen Lu's heart from her back!

“Ahhhh—” Nen Lu let out a wretched scream, the fury in her heart was at its peak. She endured the intense pain and used all her strength to throw Su Luo off the cliff.

However, Su Luo was stuck to her body like Niupi candy (1). No matter what she did, she couldn't throw Su Luo off.

At the same time, Su Luo unceasingly stabbed her with the dagger.

In less than a second, countless numbers of lacerations appeared on Nen Lu's body.

However, Nen Lu wouldn't let Su Luo have an easy time of it either. She finally sent a heavy palm strike towards Su Luo.

The pit of Su Luo's stomach was hit by that palm. Su Luo only felt a metallic sweetness in her throat, and then a huge stream of blood wildly sprayed out.

At this moment, both of them was at the edge of the cliff. The bitingly cold wind screamed through the mountains, blowing on the two bruised and battered people, who were on the verge of collapse.

The sound of Nen Lu's grim laugh echoed, as she sent one foot kicking towards Su Luo.

This kick contained all of her strength. She had already calculated that this kick was enough to send Su Luo down the cliff, as a way to destroy the body while erasing all the evidence.

However, just at this critical juncture, Su Luo grabbed onto and tightly hugged Nen Lu's leg which was kicking her.

Because of the effect of gravity, both of them fell off the cliff.

While they were falling, Su Luo used her strength to keep pulling and twisting, until she was on top, while Nen Lu was beneath her.

Nen Lu was so angry that she wanted to do the same by imitating Su Luo's actions, but Su Luo's foot heavily kicked her downwards.

Nen Lu's heart was so enraged that she swore, if there was a next life, she would definitely dismember Su Luo's body and chop it into ten thousand pieces!

But there wasn't enough time for her to think much more. Now, the two

of them had already dropped close to the bottom of the abyss.

“Splash——”Both of them fell into the water, the deafening sound of water being displaced resounded, like being shot out of a geyser, water flew high into the sky. At that moment, both of them completely lost consciousness.

Both of their bodies were brutally pulled by the current of the creek, continuously colliding with obstructions in the water. Nobody knew where this water flowed to.

Unaware of how much time had passed, Su Luo’s eyelashes, which were thin as a cicada’s wing, trembled slightly. She slowly opened her eyes, and saw a rock above her head.

She now discovered that the illuminations in all directions were very dim, and that she had been washed ashore by the creek water.

Su Luo found that her entire body was in pain. It was so agonizing, that it was as if her body had been torn into tiny little pieces. The pain was so great that she was almost numb.

Su Luo fetched a handful of water from within her space, and with much difficulty, she drank it. After a long while, she was slowly able to recover.

She staggeringly stood up, and suspiciously took measure of her surroundings.

This place was a crescent-shaped cave.

A cave that had been abandoned for many years.

Su Luo was so weak that she could barely stand, but she clenched her teeth and stood up. She swayingly staggered towards the inside of the cave.

She supported herself using the cave's wall. With great strain, she walked more than a hundred meters into the cave, yet she still hadn't reached the end.

This strip of dark tunnel was pitch-black and gloomy, as if leading to a borderless underworld. Everything was covered in darkness.

However, without knowing why, it seemed as if a mysterious power was beckoning to her. It continuously coaxed her to continue walking deeper inside.

She roughly walked about another three hundred meters. Su Luo kept breathing in mouthfuls of cold air. Where did this tunnel actual lead to? Could it be that there was no end to this path?

She really didn't believe it.

Su Luo's competitive heart was aroused. She dragged her exhausted body, step by step shuffling further into the cave. She walked a full thousand meters, when all of a sudden, her sharp ears heard the sound from the bubbling water of a creek.

When Su Luo walked to the place where the sound was coming from, her eyes couldn't help but open wide, scanning the scene in front of her.

At this moment, she thought her own eyes were seeing things.

The dark tunnel ended in an unexpectedly large, circular space, which was no less than the size of a basketball court. This empty space appeared to be very spacious.

At the center of this place was a purple furnace shaped standing cauldron (2). Workbenches formed a circle surrounding the cauldron. Some crystal stones and medicinal herbs were sparsely arranged on the workbenches.

1 Niupi candy is a sticky, stretchy caramel like candy usually cut into rectangles and covered in sesame seeds. Here is a Chinese site that shows how you can make it.

2 The Chinese character is Ding – an ancient Chinese standing cauldron used for cooking, serving and storage vessel. Smaller version of it was used to hold wine and food during religious rituals. The Ding can have three or four standing legs. See wiki link here.

Chapter 96 – To search for hidden treasures (2)

Not far from the workbenches, there was a bookshelf with a few books randomly placed on the shelves.

However, this was not the cause of Su Luo's astonishment. What amazed her was that there were about seven to eight corpses lying in various positions surrounding the workbench. Every corpse was air-dried and withered, as if the owner had passed away a long time ago.

It was very clear that these people had been in a very intense fight.

Su Luo was in the midst of frowning when suddenly, she sensed danger behind her. Su Luo immediately dropped and rolled on the ground to dodge.

“Didn't know that your survival skills were so great. Even the fall couldn't kill you!” Nen Lu said as she leaned on the corner wall for support. Her face displayed a duplicitous and furtive smile, full of strong killing intent.

In the beginning, Nen Lu was only following orders to kill Su Luo when she attacked the other. However, at this moment, Nen Lu was itching to dismember Su Luo into ten thousand tiny pieces for her own benefit.

“Aren't you also still alive?” Su Luo's smile was as light as a cloud and gentle like the wind. Nevertheless, a trace of apprehension appeared in her heart.

The opponent was a third ranked martial artist, while she herself had no spiritual strength. They were both injured, but by observing Nen Lu's attack a moment ago, Su Luo realized that Nen Lu's injuries were much lighter than hers.

Nen Lu was about to seize this opportunity to kill Su Luo when suddenly, her line of sight turned towards the interior of the room.

With just this one look, she was so amazed that her mouth fell open. Then, an ecstatic expression appeared on her face.

Nen Lu quickly walked into the room, full of excitement and with an incredulous expression. She looked at everything inside. She kept mumbling to herself. "This. This can't be real, right? Could it actually be Zi Huo's medicinal cauldron? Is it really Zi Huo's medicinal cauldron?"

"What is a Zi Huo's medicinal cauldron?" Su Luo asked, full of curiosity.

At this time, Nen Lu already viewed Su Luo as a dead person, so she felt no need to conceal anything from her. Right now, Nen Lu really needed to let out the ecstasy in her heart or else she would go mad from holding it in.

"I told you you were a good-for-nothing but you refuse to accept it. You haven't even heard of Zi Huo's medicinal cauldron. Zi Huo's medicinal cauldron is a top-notch divine artifact pursued by all the Apothecaries in the world. If they use this medicinal cauldron to refine medicine, then the rate of success will increase by a hundredfold! Never mind, talking to you is simply like playing a lute to a cow (1). You don't even know what

an Apothecary is, right?”

Confronted by Nen Lu’s belittling expression, Su Luo coldly laughed in her heart. Sorry to embarrass you, but this great one actually has a wood-fire dual system and was preparing to level up as an Apothecary.

At this moment, Nen Lu looked at Zi Huo’s medicinal cauldron in wonder. Her sword was emitting mysterious rays of light as she murmured to herself. “It was said that during that time, Elder Zi Huo went into seclusion. Could it be that he finally died here?”

“Elder Zi Huo?” Su Luo again asked, “Who is he?”

Nen Lu rolled her eyes. “You haven’t even heard of Elder Zi Huo? This renowned Elder was the world’s only Master level Apothecary. Do you know how many famous families and noble clans under the heavens wanted to curry favor with this renowned Elder? Yet you have actually never heard of this Elder Zi Huo. Your stupidity can’t be cured. I really have nothing more to say to you.”

Su Luo knew that the continent’s Apothecaries were divided into levels: Elementary Apothecary, Intermediate Apothecary, Advanced Apothecary, Elite Apothecary, as well as Master Apothecary.

It was extremely difficult to advance to the next Apothecary level.

However, Apothecaries were rare, thus making every Apothecary extremely precious.

Su Manor’s Apothecary was only an Elementary Apothecary, but due to

his existence, he was able to ensure that Su Manor did not topple for the past few decades.

She never expected that the Elder Zi Huo was the legendary rumored Master Apothecary. It was indeed hard to imagine.

“Wow!” Nen Lu, who was lingering in front of the bookshelf ahead, suddenly loudly shrieked, “Primeval pill recipes! Unexpectedly, 《Obscure Pill Recipes》(2) is also here! Oh heavens! Jackpot, I really hit the jackpot!”

《Obscure Pill Recipes》 was Elder Zi Huo’s personal notes. It was a written record of his life’s knowledge and experience regarding medicinal recipes. Inside, it also had a lot of primeval pill recipes which had not been passed on and were thought to be lost for eternity.

1) playing a lute to a cow – idiom: figuratively meaning offering a treat to an unappreciative audience; to cast pearls before swine; caviar to the general; to preach to deaf ears; to talk over somebody’s head.

2) 《》 we are going to use the same brackets that the author used for highlighting titles.... I’m sure I’ll eventually find the underline function in WordPress but the brackets looks cooler

Chapter 97 – To search for hidden treasures (3)

Including Zi Huo's medicinal cauldron, these were all treasures that Apothecaries would yearn for in their dreams.

Countless experts on the continent have sought this《Obscure Pill Recipes》in order to curry favors with Apothecaries. However after having flipped over the entire continent in their search, no one was able to find it. Yet, she would never have imagined that in her hunt for Su Luo she had unexpectedly lucked out. She found 《Obscure Pill Recipes》, and even Zi Huo's medicinal cauldron.

At this moment, Nen Lu almost went mad with joy!

She trembled with jubilation and extreme excitement. She almost jumped up for joy in her elation .

She reached out for the《Obscure Pill Recipes》, but very quickly she withdrew her hand.

She didn't dare, she was afraid of death.

This was because the corpses lying haphazardly on the floor told her that Elder Zi Huo was definitely a poison expert. His belongings definitely could not be encroached upon by just anyone.

“You, come here!” Nen Lu raised her long sword to Su Luo's neck, coldly glaring at her as if looking at a dead man.

“You want to kill me to silence me?” Su Luo lifted the corner of her lips in a slight smile that was not truly a smile.

“Kill you to silence you?” Nen Lu laughed out loud. “I definitely will kill you to silence you. Otherwise, if even half a word of what happened here were to spread from your lips, great trouble will befall our Jade Lake Palace. Therefore, you must die.”

“Really?” Su Luo faintly smiled. Just great, she too had a similar notion.

“But right now, you can’t die yet.” Nen Lu used the long sword to threaten Su Luo and bellowed, “Bring that《Obscure Pill Recipes》over here.”

Nen Lu wanted to appropriate everything here for herself, but she would not even dare to touch them.

Obviously, she was being used as a lab rat! Su Luo felt a chill flashed across her heart; her gaze fell upon the corpses on the floor, one had a dagger stabbed into it.

Icy-cold light reflected off the dagger.

“Fine.” Su Luo did not refuse. She walked over step by step, with a harmless smile on her face.

“Quickly pick it up!” Nen Lu coldly commanded.

She wanted to use Su Luo to test for poison, to see if this《Obscure Pill Recipes》had any poison on it.

Right now, at this crucial moment, she must not die. Discovering Elder Zi Huo’s cave, what other achievement could compare to it? Having this achievement, in the future, even Qing Ning that bitch, would be beneath her.

Perhaps, she could take those things and escape to faraway places. This also was not a bad idea, such thoughts quickly flashed through Nen Lu’s mind.

Su Luo watched Nen Lu’s constantly changing expressions, and a hint of sneer appeared in her eyes.

An inexperienced naive idiot.

But the expression on Su Luo’s face remained unchanged, and when her hand touched the book, she silently mouthed, “Collect.”

Suddenly, in an instant, the book vanished from the bookshelf.

“Huh— what happened? Where’s the book?” Su Luo pretended to be surprised, and with a expression of having lost her head out of fear, she screamed out loud.

Nen Lu's whole face had a look of utter disbelief.

She had kept a very close eye on it just now. Her line of sight never once leaving Su Luo's hand, yet she could only helplessly watch as that book, in an instant, vanished without a trace.

What actually happened? The book was fine, how could it just disappear?

This time, I must have seen a ghost!

Nen Lu could confirm that during such a short time, Su Luo had no chance to pull off any tricks. It was a pity that no matter how much she speculates, she could never have guessed that Su Luo was unexpectedly a space mage, with her body carrying a portable space.

That was why, Nen Lu's first reaction was to leap to the bookshelf and search for it continuously.

At this time, Su Luo was bending over pretending to search for it, but she furtively pulled out the dagger.

Seeing that Nen Lu's whole attention was focused on searching through the《Primeval Pill Recipes》, the corner of Su Luo's mouth lifted into an ice-cold, unrestrained, demonic and sly smile.

No sooner said than done ——

Chapter 98 – To search for hidden treasures (4)

With a barely perceivable movement of Su Luo's hand, that dagger had already vanished into her sleeves.

All of Nen Lu's attention was focused on finding 《Obscure Pill Recipes》, so she did not notice Su Luo's covert movements.

“Where did it go? Why can't I can't find it?” Su Luo questioned with a puzzled look upon her face, firmly gripping the dagger in her sleeves as she stealthily approached Nen Lu.

“Was it because——” Nen Lu frowned. She was about to turn around when she noticed a shadow rapidly coming towards her. Nen Lu subconsciously tried to block the attack with her hand, tragically causing her right hand to be severed neatly at the wrist. The place of the cut was flat and smooth.

Immediately, blood wildly gushed out from the open wound as if it wasn't vital to Nen Lu's life!

“Ahhhhh——” Only after seeing the severed hand that had fallen on the ground did Nen Lu finally realize what had happened! She screamed out loud in agony.

Su Luo was equally unsatisfied with this result.

Originally, Su Luo had a well thought out plan: directly stab Nen Lu's

heart through her back. With Su Luo's speed and accuracy, it wouldn't be possible for Nen Lu to escape death. Still, who would have known that at the last moment Nen Lu would manage to retain her life.

If Nen Lu did an about face and ran right now, she would merely lose a hand but would preserve her life.

It's a pity that Nen Lu was so blinded by her hatred of Su Luo at the moment so she was itching to make mincemeat out of Su Luo to appease the hatred in her heart. Consequently, Nen Lu didn't even take the time to think before picking up the long sword that had fallen with her dismembered hand while ignoring the pain she felt. She directly charged at Su Luo with a murderous strike.

A cold smirk flashed across Su Luo's eyes. She took out a book from her space and tossed it toward Nen Lu with a smile on her face. "Catch it! Don't lose it again."

"《Obscure Pill Recipes》?" Nen Lu's eyes opened wide. She stared with stunned amazement at the 《Obscure Pill Recipes》that appeared in Su Luo's hand from out of nowhere. Her attention was momentarily distracted.

However, this short split second of carelessness was enough for Su Luo!

Immediately after she threw the 《Obscure Pill Recipes》in Nen Lu's direction, Su Luo had quickly shifted her body and arrived at Nen Lu's back like a ghost. While Nen Lu's attention was momentarily distracted, like a demon from hell, Su Luo raised the new dagger she had picked up and slashed Nen Lu's neck——

Immediately, blood gushed forth!

Nen Lu was staring blankly at the 《Obscure Pill Recipes》in her hand. Her nails had whitened because she was ready to explode with rage.

However, Nen Lu could only watch the unstoppable blood pour out of her neck. She glared at Su Luo with an expression of having suddenly realized something. “Space, space....mage....”

Afterwards, with an unreconciled expression, Nen Lu fell backwards. Her eyes were wide open with malevolence. Even in death, they wouldn't close due to residual resentment.

Su Luo grabbed the 《Obscure Pill Recipes》from Nen Lu's clenched fingers, patted off the dust, and was all smiles as she said. “Correct, this young lady is a space mage. It's a pity you only realized it as you were dying. It. Was. Too. Late!”

At this moment, Su Luo was very thankful for her space. In the beginning, she had felt that it was weak. Now, she had slowly discovered its exceptional qualities.

After eliminating Nen Lu, Su Luo started to look around for treasure.

She stood in front of the bookshelf. The shelves were full of advanced pharmacology books, many of which Su Luo couldn't comprehend.

However, that didn't matter. She will take all the books back and slowly study them. Su Luo did not grab the books one by one. Instead, she placed the entire bookshelf into her space.

Afterwards, Su Luo held her chin and started to circle around Zi Huo's medicinal cauldron. While circling, she took its measure by looking it up and down. She pondered this medicinal cauldron was nothing special but why was it so heavy?

Yes, it was definitely quite heavy. Su Luo had already tested its weight a moment ago.

Chapter 99 – To search for hidden treasures (5)

Su Luo wanted to shift the medicinal cauldron, but found that no matter how much strength she used, it wouldn't budge. It was as if the thing was rooted to the ground.

If others wanted to take away the medicinal cauldron, it would be extremely difficult. Who knew Su Luo would have the greatest treasure for traveling that others would kill for on her body?

Su Luo placed her hand on the edge of the medicinal cauldron and murmured, "collect."

Thus, Zi Huo's medicinal cauldron, weighing over five thousand kilograms (1), vanished on the spot.

Su Luo extended her senses into her space and become somewhat worried.

She discovered that after circling the cave and taking everything, that little ten square meters of space had been stuffed full, with barely any space left for her to stand in it.

How could she do this? That corner still had a pile of black rocks. She had neither an idea of what it was nor its purpose.

Since she couldn't pack it, then she would just abandon it. She would wait until she was fated to come back here and collect it in the future, Su

Luo thought sadly.

Hence, she bent over to pick up a few pieces, planning to find someone to analyze it.

After all, it was left behind by Elder Zi Huo, something left behind by him, how could it be simple?

After throwing exactly three rocks into her space, all of a sudden, Su Luo felt a wave of dizziness. It was a pain that she couldn't make heads or tails of it, and that almost knocked her off her feet.

But this kind of stinging pain left as quickly as it came, it was gone in the blink of an eye.

At this moment, Su Luo checked her space, and suddenly, her mouth formed an "O" shape.

Unexpectedly, this was also possible?

Su Luo discovered that her space had grown bigger, even though the change was not obvious. However, at the corner her space, it had actually grown by square meter.

This kind of discovery made Su Luo ecstatic.

The space can actually get larger?

Su Luo's gaze fell upon the pile of round black stones.

Just now, she had put in the medicinal cauldron, books and other materials, and yet the space did not change. However, after putting in those three black little stones, her space changed.

Could it be that these rocks were able to increase the size of her space?

Whether it was true or not, she could find out by trying again.

Su Luo picked up a black rock and threw it in, one piece, two pieces, three pieces...

“Whoosh—”

Suddenly, Su Luo felt her head started to ache, it hurt so much that she broke out in cold sweat. But after she opened her eyes, she found that her space had indeed grown bigger by another square meter!

It turned out to be true!

This discovery allowed Su Luo to put her heart at ease.

Without hesitation, she promptly swept up the remaining ten or so stones from the ground into her space, sweeping the floor clean.

Hence, her space had widened again by another five square meters.

Su Luo was secretly delighted. If there was an opportunity, she would go search for more of these black stones.

At this moment, Su Luo had yet to find out what kind of energy actually resided in these black rocks, and how advantageous they would be to her cultivation in the future.

However, just as Su Luo was about to leave, she realized that another person was at the entrance. That person was hugging her sword and reclining against the entrance, lips in a sneer, with eyes as cold as a viper unblinkingly staring at her.

Su Luo felt her heart jump, silently bemoaning trouble.

Just now, she had recklessly swept up all those treasures in the room. Had it possibly been witnessed by her opponent?

Since Su Luo could not sense the other's presence when she arrived, this already proved that that person's martial skills were a lot better than hers.

“Su Luo, your cheap life still has such great luck in surviving!” Er Huang held her double-edged sword, sneering nonstop as she approached Su Luo.

Ever since Er Huang had lost Su Luo's trail, she had continuously searched. Later, she found traces of a fight at the edge of a cliff. Without another word, she shimmied down the creeper vine and searched

enroute. Unexpectedly, she had discovered this cave that was a completely different world.

However, the most important discovery was of Su Luo's body.

Er Huang would never have imagined, that the legendary good-for-nothing, was actually a space mage that was considered to be extinct on the continent!

1) A Chinese Jin = 0.5 kilogram or 1.1 pounds. Here the author stated 10,000 jin, which then equals 5,000 kilogram. We will be converting all measurements to the International System of Units .

Chapter 100 – In enemy hands (1)

Moreover, Su Luo's space wasn't small either!

Although Apothecaries are rare, weighed against the almost extinct space mages, how could they even compare?

If the matter of a space mage appearing was to spread, in all likelihood, wouldn't the entire continent be stirred up by this?

Unbelievable! Er Huang really couldn't have imagined it. This vile girl was actually a space mage. Originally, she wanted to kill Su Luo but now she couldn't. She believed that the Young Mistress would be overjoyed to give this slut to the Venerable Master as an offering. After they had placed Su Luo's mind under their control, she could only helplessly throw her life away in service to the Jade Lake Palace!

The more Er Huang thought about it, the more she gleeful she became. Her smile had a sinister measuring look as she step by step walked towards Su Luo. Her hand swung the long sword, aiming its sharp tip straight at Su Luo. "Little slut, let's see where you can run to now."

Su Luo's thoughts were indeed currently suppressed to the point that she felt she was about to die.

During the five thousand kilometer Long March (1), she had overcome so much and walked so long (2). Just when she saw the end of the road, at this final juncture, she was intercepted by the enemy forces.

This was truly the story of the praying mantis stalking the cicada, unaware of the Black-Naped Oriole bird behind. Moreover, she was the unfortunate hateful praying mantis.

Nangong Liuyun had exhorted and warned Su Luo a great number of times before to be cautious and prudent. She must not let the matter of her being a space mage be revealed. Otherwise, her life would be in constant danger.

Now, Su Luo's greatest hidden trump card had been discovered by the Jade Lake fairy's maid...if this was to leak out....

Su Luo's eyes narrowed slightly. A homicidal determination to obliterate all evidence of her unwitting disclosure appeared in Su Luo's heart.

However, her expression remained calm and collected. Icy rays from the depths of Su Luo's eyes shot a quick glance at Er Huang. "What if I don't go with you?"

"Do you really think you have the leeway to choose?" Er Huang condescendingly said while casting disparaging glances at Su Luo.

Er Huang's current situation was like the Venerable Queen up high while Su Luo was merely an ant that she could easily trample on. Su Luo was just a lowly ant that completely lacked the strength to fight back.

But, when Er Huang's vision landed on Nen Lu's body that was on the ground with eyes full of unresolved resentment staring sightlessly in

death, a trace of shock passed through her eyes.

Nen Lu had actually been killed?

She and Nen Lu had grown up together. They had practiced martial arts together, so Er Huang was very familiar with Nen Lu's martial arts abilities and knew it was on par with hers. Never in a million years could she have imagined that Nen Lu would die under the hands of the good-for-nothing Su Luo.

Nen Lu really had died with unresolved grievances.

“Looks like I really underestimated you, slut.” Er Huang cast sidelong glances at Su Luo, gnashing her teeth as her rage burst forth.

Er Huang was itching to finish off Su Luo with one sword strike. Regrettably, she could not kill Su Luo now. Su Luo was this continent's almost extinct space mage. Furthermore, she was also a space mage that did not have any power to protect herself.

Er Huang secretly speculated that if she was to take Su Luo to an auction house and sell her, on the basis of this little slut's innate gift and appearance, shouldn't she be able to sell for an unrepresented sky-high price?

It would indeed be a fortune that could tempt a person's heart.

Su Luo examined Er Huang's constantly changing sinister expressions and also turned her head to look at the corpse of the fallen Nen Lu. A

bitter look appeared in Su Luo's eyes.

Her secret having been discovered was disastrous. Due to this, Er Huang would certainly increase her vigilance. Su Luo's small tricks from before could not be used again.

With a bitter smile on her face, Su Luo raised both of her hands in surrender. Er Huang had learned a lesson from Nen Lu's mistake and as a result had become very cautious.

Er Huang took out a dark red blood-colored rope and tied both of Su Luo's hands behind her back. Er Huang had bound Su Luo so tightly that the joint looked seamless.

“Behave. Don't even think about escaping!” Er Huang warned with a stern voice.

Su Luo only made a slight movement. When Er Huang's icy-cold long sword sliced at her neck, a thin thread of blood slowly seeped out of the cut.

Su Luo knew that if she resisted, on account of having killed two of the opponent's sister-in-arms, Er Huang would probably without a second thought either break or cut off her arms and legs.

1) Five thousand kilometer Long March written in Chinese was ten thousand Li (2 Li = 1 kilometer) – This is a reference to the historical one made by the eventual communist leader Ma Zedong in October of 1934. Before World War II, China had a civil war/internal struggle for

power between the Chinese National Party led by Chiang Kai-Shek and the Chinese Red Army of the Communist Party. Chiang Kai-Shek was about to eliminate the red army at Jiang Xi when Ma Zedong and Zhou Enlai led the long march to escape the encirclement. The march was a bitter one that lasted a year with only 10% of the original troops surviving till the end.

2) The Chinese characters stated twenty five thousand Li = 125,000 kilometers; I took the figurative meaning here because the Long March was only 9000 kilometers.

Translation by:

Alyschu

Epub By:

Yuki (The Emperor)